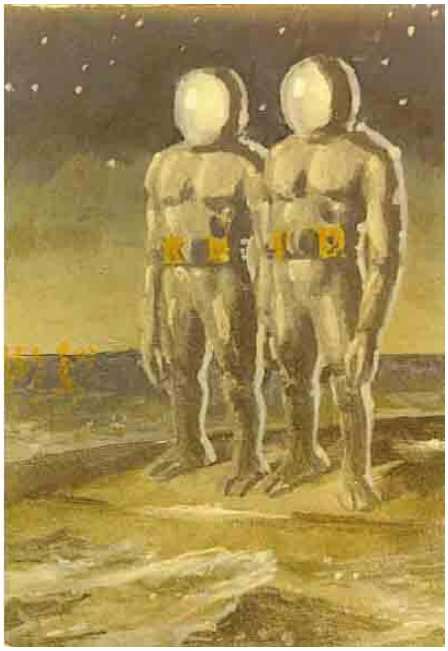
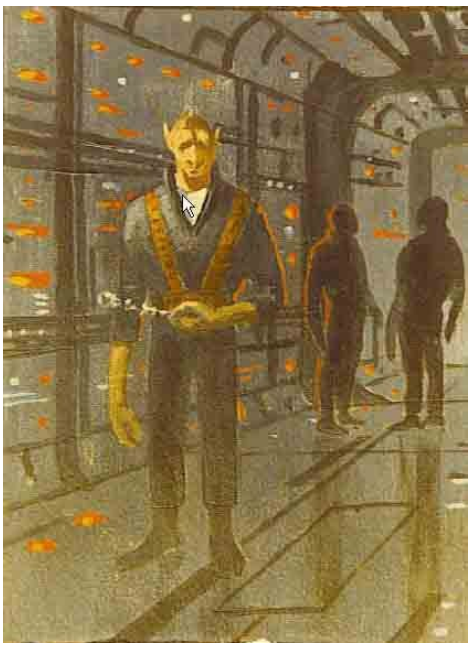
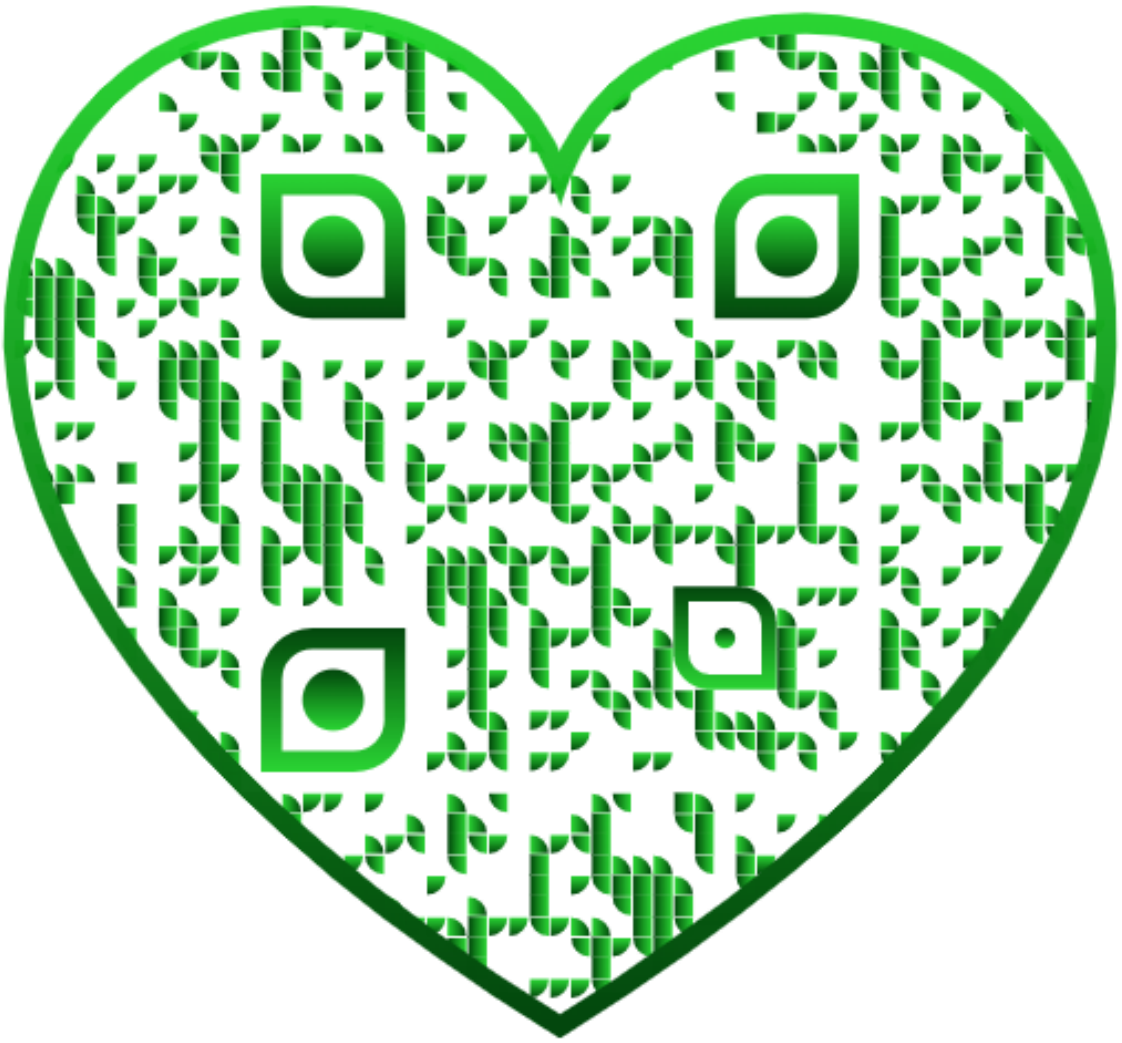
UFO-CONTACT FROM PLANET IARGA





pictures made by div.artists - in center on how Stefan first saw them on their waterfloating ship, and right an idea of "them" - home on Iarga



INTRODUCTION

This is a true story of a UFO contact from a planet called IARGA - by the alien astronauts visiting our Earth. They say that their Sun is about 10 light years as we count time from us, and that they have been observing us for some time.....

This story was first published in Dutch by Ankh-Hermes of Deventer, Netherlands in 1969 and has gone through 11 Editions and 40,000 hardbound copies in Dutch since then. It has been published as science fiction up to now because the publisher originally felt that this story would not sell as fact. Nevertheless it is a true account of real events and we are publishing it as such, here, for the first time, together with the very extensive follow-on data as the contacts continued right up to the present time. We have investigated this case extensively over the past 4 years and conclude that the facts do in reality verify and support the story. The witness is a very well educated and highly articulate master mechanical engineer and an architectural artist as well, a rare combination ideally suited for this contact if the alien visitors wanted their information to be understood and presented with any degree of accuracy.

The witness is also a well known multinational industrialist in Europe whose real name would be immediately recognized. He is the owner of several companies doing international business. To preserve his identity in order to protect his private life, we are using a pseudonym given him by the extraterrestrials themselves. They referred to him as "Stef van den Earde" (Stef of the Earth) from which Stefan Denaerde was derived. When I first met this man I was surprised by his size. He is a big man, about 6'4" tall and weighing perhaps 220 to 230 pounds.

contactperson Stefan Danaerde (!.9m tall) left and author W.C.Stevens.

He dresses conservatively in expensive business suits and is very courteous and polite. He is mild mannered and introspective by nature, and speaks with almost perfect economy of words. He says what he means and means what he says. In discussions he is not given to elaboration and volunteers little information by himself He answers questions forthrightly, directly and honestly, and looks one right in the eye as he speaks. He is not known to tell fictitious stories, but is considered to be a model of truthfulness and integrity.

He lives in an upper class quiet neighborhood in a professional suburb of Den Hague. His home, on a beautiful treelined street, looks to have a $150,000 to $200,000 value, and is well maintained and beautifully landscaped. It faces a park reserve across the street from him. The neighborhood looks scrubbed dean. This man was not a UFO buff and has no collection of UFO books and journals. He does not lecture or talk on his experience publicity or privately. He does not write articles on it or give interviews. He did not believe in the phenomena and had gone to no pains to evaluate if before his own contact. He still does not believe in UFOs as such.

His experience was real AND WAS IDENTIFIED. In the long course of contact discussions, he learned a great deal about our real history, where we have been and where we are going, and how we fit into this great universe. He found that our written

histories are not very accurate because of our constant revisions by different regimes. He was shown a future course of events in store for Us if we do not change our ways, and was then shown how fixed we are in our course and the improbability that we will change in time. He is saddened and discouraged by our lack of real progress, and feels that revelation of this information is a needless and ineffective burden for a self-destructive humanity. He does not see Us changing in time! The first book, "Buitenaardse Beschaving", printed in Dutch, is an account of the contact experience up to the departure of the spacecraft the following day. The contacts continued, however, and a vast amount of technical information was communicated to the witness over the next several months and even years.

The Iargans compared their society and their philosophies to ours, and described advanced technologies, man's place in the greater universe, and what is in store for all of Us in the future. These communications continued and ultimately developed into a sort of mechanical transmission from a technical device aboard the spacecraft to the mind of the witness, something like the way it was done during his visit aboard the spacecraft in the Oostscheld, except that now the pictures were transmitted to his mind instead of viewing them on a screen. Unknown to the witness however, and this will be news to him when he sees it in print for the first time, communications experts working with NATO in defense systems had picked up a strange incoming RF (radio frequency) electronic signal in the vicinity of a high security NATO defense installation in the Netherlands, and became very disturbed about the nature and purpose of this transmission. It was in an unusual bandwidth and had a strange character. It also was only detectable within a limited area in Den Hague (The Hague near where the sensitive installation is located. NATO Intelligence, believing this may be an attempt to interfere with the defense installation and its equipment, moved hundreds of thousands of dollars worth of highly sophisticated detection equipment into the area to try to find out what was happening.

It seems that this strange signal would begin about 4:00 PM and continue for an hour or more several days each week. Now, before this information came to light, my interviews with the witness had shown that his contacts were coming in several days each week on a more or less regular basis. The witness's habit was to come home from his office about 3:00 PM daily, read his personal mail and relax in his living room for a while. Often, when he was contacted, the "telepathic" transmission would begin about 4:00 PM, and would continue for an hour or more. This strange coincidence became of paramount importance when I learned that the search for the strongest signal was taking them only a few blocks from this man's home where he was receiving the contacts!

I don't know whether they have identified the source of the transmissions yet or not, and I don't know yet if there was any other transmission that may have occupied this time period by pure coincidence. In either case I am sure that I would not be advised because intelligence information usually goes only one direction. A point of particular interest in this case is the fact that this witness was told by the Iargan visitors themselves, that their

group had contacted four other Earth humans in a similar manner, and had imparted similar information to each of them, and that once one of them got into print and became known, the others would make an attempt to contact him. This will certainly be a curious validation if any one of these others do in fact turn up. These contacts are still continuing on a lesser schedule and an unbelievable amount of information has been imparted to this man. !

(As the text is scanned here - there may be some wordmistakes.The book is long ago out of print. The pictures can be some enlarged by clicking on them. Some words are translated into scandinavian in ()).

FOREWORD FROM THE AUTHOR

*This book is the account of a meeting with the crew of a spacecraft from a distant solar system in our milky-wa*y. There are many who claim to have spoken with alien beings, often resulting in strange or garbled stories, so many in fact that their credibility has decreased to almost zero. After my own experience, I think that I understand the cause of the problem. The honesty of these people is beyond reproach, but their ability as observers may leave much to be desired. These experiences take place in the zones between our normal, material method of communication, and the immaterial method that we usually describe as thought transference or telepathy. With this, the conditioning of the observer determines the quality of the reception. For example, subjects which do not affect him personally will, within his abilities, be received with the greatest clarity; whereas anything that touches him emotionally will be strongly biased or not received at all. Due to this, even a sworn statement from a completely trustworthy observer is useless, because no guarantee can be given that he knows what really confronts him.

I realize that it must seem strange for me to warn the reader of the risks involved with this type of observer when I fall into the same category, but this is because I do not want to be just believed, partly because I know why a certain group of people refuse to believe. When you have read this book, it will be dear what I mean by this. The only means of checking the credibility of the observer is logic. Due to her cosmic isolation, humanity is ignorant in certain fields, and someone who really has communicated with a super-civilization that has evolved above the material state (the minimum demand for interstellar travel), and understood them, must have access to information that is new, logical, and that can be checked in order to be convincing. As I have said, I do not seek belief, I ask my readers to be critical, but to bear in mind that the subject is so complex that it would be unreasonable to expect my story to be faultless. The content of this book is divided into two parts; the first is a description of the planet Iarga and her inhabitants and, as such, meets the demand for an identification procedure which is a mandatory introduction to all exchanges between intelligent races. The identity of a race is determined by its planet and its history, and these must be explained.

The aim of the first part is therefore purely the identification of this alien race and is not an attempt to create some kind of picture of earthly ideals, something that we should try

to emulate. Iarga is different in every way. The planet and her inhabitants have a different mentality and character, and therefore a different cycle of evolution. One difference is that Iarga is almost completely covered with water. The available area of land is. spread over numerous islands with a total surface area not much larger than Australia, and according to our standards, is much too small to feed and accommodate the billions of beings needed to reach the goal of their creation. The extreme efficiency of their planning and food production methods would be pointless on Earth, and their population density forces them to a kind of over-socialized community. Only beings that posses the ability to continually improve their mentality and eliminate all aggression, have a chance of reaching perfection on such planets. We do not have this ability, the reincarnation-selection of Iarga does not exist on Earth. Here, the weeds grow up with the corn until the harvest.

Despite the vast differences, a remarkable likeness can be detected in some things; so much so that these beings can be regarded as humans that have physically adapted to life on an alien world. Their intellectual, emotional, and creative capabilities are the same as ours, and if we had been placed in the same situation, we would have become roughly the same. When the second part of this book has been read, this will no longer cause any surprise; it will have become dear that these beings are not only our cosmic brothers and sisters, but that there also exists our ego-counterpart with which we will one day be united. With the introduction complete, the real work can begin. The reason for their visit is so strange that preliminary explanation is necessary. The human race lives in complete isolation from the other intelligent races for as long as the so-called "transformation phase" continues. The plan of creation demands that we, like all others, complete the transformation phase in ignorance of our origin and our purpose. Through this we, create our individual identity and, at the same time, have the opportunity to develop our godlike talents by exploiting our creative powers and defining them, thereby earning our immortality.

The number of talent fractions is not infinite, so the time must come that the numbers of man are fulfilled. When this happens, the transformation phase will be terminated by certain external encroachments that will subjugate the will and sovereignty of the human race. The plan of creation forbids interference in the development of an ignorant race, thus the necessity for the planting of knowledge here on Earth. This knowledge appears to be comprehensive. To begin, the complete scientifically verifiable story of the creation, from the creation of time, matter, and energy from nothing; to the goal of the creation of the universe: the cosmic integration of all the intelligent races in one all-encompassing consciousness that is beyond our understanding. In this we are given a glimpse of the wonderful future that awaits Us. Beside this, a great deal of information regarding ourselves, our origin, our development, the present transformation process, the spiritual development after death, our creation mandate, and our future is given.

The first point is the most important, only when we under-stand the creation process, and in particular the development process of man, can we understand and accept the

reason for the external interference that will take place in the near future. Without this knowledge the interference would be useless and therefore undesirable. Lastly, their information includes a general description of other intelligent races and their different evolution cycles, which will enable Us to approach a determination of our unique position in the midst of an incredible number of intelligent races. The fundamental reason for this book is the abolition of Earth's isolation and the announcement of the fulfilling of the numbers of man. Our first mandate was carried out in ignorance, the second will be carried out in full consciousness. The only question that remains is to what extent does this book reach its goal of removing the Earth's cosmic isolation. The question is all the more impelling when it is said that I had to give my word never to attempt to prove the existence of Iarga, because this would damage the individual freedom of mankind. I have fought with this problem for many years, until at last the problem solved itself. Even though I shall continue to avoid giving a direct answer to the question of the veracity of this story, the immensity of Earth-alien knowledge contained in this book will serve to prove beyond a doubt that the planet Iarga is not fiction, but fact.

Stefan Denaerde and W. Stevens:

contactperson Stefan Danaerde (!.9m tall) left and author W.C.Stevens.

PART 1: Identification

This part includes the initial contact with the extraterrestrial visitors and the nearly 8 hours of events and discussions that took place aboard the alien spacecraft as the witness was shown and experienced scenes and conditions in the life of the Iargans, both on their home planet and in their spacecraft.

CHAPTER 1

Confrontation

Iarga; I can talk about it now, the fascinating dusky green planet with its somber pink sky is no dream but-just a moment. I must first sort out the mass of information gamed during my astounding experiences and relate it logically and coherently.

I need to do this for myself as well. Any explanation of my chaotic memories may help me to become my old self gain. It is difficult for me to remember the man I used to be. How I felt that beautiful summer evening on board my yacht that drifted like a huge white swan on the windless waters of the Oosterscheld (An art of the sea in the southwestern delta of the Netherlands.)

"Hey, Dad, do you know that the compass is broken?"

I took no notice; it was probably just one of my son's childish jokes. I sat stretched out in a deck chair, contentedly sipping my coffee and surveying the distant coast of Schouwen-Duive-land (An island in the delta.) where we planned to arrive before dark.

On the small strip of land above the horizon, I could see the light that marked the harbor entrance at Burgsluis. "Honest, Dad, it's broken. Come and look," persisted my son. Still disbelieving, I forced myself to stand up and walked over' to where my wife, son and small daughters were standing looking at the compass as though they had never seen it before in their lives. Something was definitely wrong. The map was hanging at a crazy angle, but worse still, the north indicator was pointing in the direction of the Zeeland bridge, to the east! I looked accusingly at the discoverer of the trouble. It wasn't out of the question that my young son was playing a joke on his father with a magnet. I was disappointed to find that this was not the case and so I started a serious investigation. In the meantime, Miriam did the dishes and put the children to bed. By the time I decided to return to Burgsluis on the motor, it was getting quite dark, and the fact that I had been unable to find the cause of the trouble irritated me immensely. Miriam was right in saying that I should not let a compass spoil such a beautiful day, but I could not rest until I knew what was wrong. Ah well, I could do that in the harbor.

I pushed the tjalk (an old-world, flat-bottomed sailing ship) at full power through the darkness of the *Oosterscheldt.* There was the light buoy. I read the number automatically

arrow where the contact took place in the bay of Oosterscheldt in the region Zeeland in Holland, in the mid 60's.
N O R D -
S J Ö E N
AMSTERDAM
B E L G I A

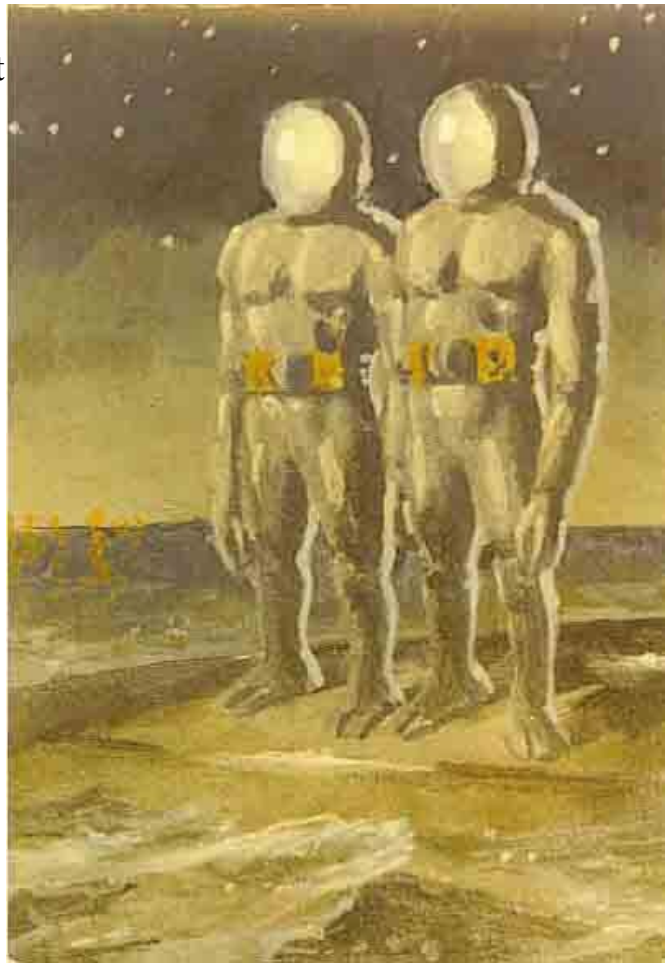
and turned sharply to port. In the distance lay the next buoy, marking the channel to Burgsluis. About six miles and we would be home. But things didn't go quite the way I had planned. Something unbelievable happened.

Suddenly, out of the darkness, a strong, blue-white searchlight shone in my eyes from a point directly in front of the bow, and at the same time I heard a high-pitched whining noise above the noise of my motor. My heart pounded. It came so unexpectedly, that it must have been several seconds before I acted. Reverse, full power! Damn, it was too late! With a frightening noise the tjalk came to a standstill against something solid, but what? Who on earth would be in the middle of the channel without lights? With shaking hands I stopped the motor and in the sudden stillness saw the startled face of Miriam appear in the cabin doorway.

"Is anyone there?" I yelled over the water. In answer the light went out, but no reply. Miriam came on deck and behind her stood the children, wide eyed with fear. "Look... there... that flat thing in the water." It looked like the hull of an overturned ship or pontoon, but we were at least thirty feet away and couldn't possibly have hit it, whatever it was. "Is anyone there?" I called a second time. The searchlight flashed on again; the strangely small beam of light swept over the water and cast a cold glare on the side of the tjalk. I caught my breath. Floating on the incoming tide was a body, face down, apparently dead. The actions that followed were carried out at nerve-racking speed. There was only one thought in my mind: to do something quickly, before the body drifted away into the darkness.

Instinctively, I carried out the motions that I had so often gone over in my mind in the event of one of the children falling overboard. Seconds later, I jumped overboard with the line from the lifeboat in my hand. But what now? I was standing in less than three feet of water, and my knees and ankles hurt from landing on something as hard as steel. In my confusion, I saw the line from the dinghy

drifting away. I stood up and dived to catch the rope, and, swimming with the small boat behind me, managed to grab the body. It wouldn't move. How would I get such a weight into the boat? First, tie the rope around him, climb into the boat myself and pull his head above the water; yes, that was it. Just then an alarm signal began to sound somewhere in the back of my mind. What kind of a man was this? He was wearing a kind of metallic suit and around his head was a rubbery ball which reflected the blue light so strongly that I was unable to see his face. I began to think about astronauts, but how on earth did he come to be in the Oosterscheldt? I started the outboard motor and began slowly back toward the tjalk, but what now? What should I do with this strange burden beside me? Why had I gone to all this trouble? My indecision grew by the minute.



The blue light made it plain that I must carry on. It was kept in my direction by someone who followed the rescue closely from beginning to end, but what did they want? In terrible confusion, I came at last alongside the tjalk, tied up the dinghy and stopped the outboard. In the silence, I heard the voices of Miriam and my eldest daughter. Thank goodness everything was all right there. Then my peace of mind received its death blow. There was suddenly a sea of light, a great diffused light *under the surface of the water.* A sound made me turn toward the strange object in the water and I saw a dark shape wading quickly toward me. It was a perfect copy of the being I had fished out of the water, with the same shiny metallic suit and a transparent ball around its head. Step by step, it came closer, and I instinctively grabbed the boat hook to defend myself. He held out an arm in a friendly gesture and turned his face toward me. I sprang back as though bitten by a snake; a wild fear cut off my breath. It was a nightmare. A terrible, indescribable feeling took hold of me. The being in front of me was not human! An animallike face, with large square pupils in the eyes, eyes which were both hypnotic and self-assured. It struck me like a thunderbolt. Here I stood, facing an alien being from a race more intelligent than my own! But why was I still so afraid? I cannot explain. If it had been a gorilla, for example, then I would have quickly sprung on board my ship and put up a fight with the boat hook to prevent the animal from coming on' board. There would have been no time for the fear that came from the feeling

of helplessness in recognition of his superiority.

The fear grew into panic, a panic which told me to get away from there as quickly as possible, before it was too late! I sprang overboard again and raced through the shallow water toward the ship as though the Devil were at my heels. Panting, I pulled myself on board and started the motor. Reverse full power. I wanted to get away from there as quickly as possible. The ship didn't move an inch. Over the bow I saw the being pull the dinghy onto the dark platform, lift the body in his arms and walk away with robotlike steps. It suddenly went dark and they were gone. With a feeling of apprehension, I stopped the motor. The situation on board was surprisingly peaceful, for they had no idea of the real drama. There was a feeling of satisfaction over father's ability as a lifesaver. My eldest daughter had developed the theory that we had rammed a submarine, which was not so unlikely, considering we were dose to a naval training area. Only Miriam realized that something was wrong. She looked at me as though I were a stranger and her uneasiness grew by the minute. She had never seen me like this before. She poured me a whisky and sent the children to bed with the excuse that we had something to talk over. The alcohol did me good, but now it seemed that I had another problem: Miriam didn't believe me! "This trip is too much for you, Stef. There are no men from Mars in the Oosterscheldt." She kept talking, perhaps to try and talk some courage into both of us. I couldn't just stay inside; I had to see what was happening outside.

With a flashlight in one hand and a boat hook in the other, I stood on deck and let the beam of light play over the platform. It lay just above the surface of the water, a sinister4ooking dark-gray thing. Its diameter was about the same as the length of our ship, certainly fifty feet. It was resting on a ledge, which reflected the light so strongly that it looked like glass. In the middle was a pillar, slightly twisted, about six feet wide and eight feet high. The total size of the thing surprised me. I knew what was under the water. I could walk at least the length of a swimming pool without falling off the edge. Could this be one of the much talked-about flying saucers? Were they really so huge and could they also operate under water? I turned the flashlight out and began systematically probing around the ship with the boat hook. In front, by the bow, about two feet, and aft, about four feet. It was strange that each time I had to use force to pull the boat hook off the bottom, as though someone were holding it.

Suddenly I remembered the strange trouble with the compass-magnetism! We had collided with a huge, magnetic monster! We were imprisoned, stuck fast on a huge magnet. In the grip of strange, unearthly beings. The only possibility of escape was the plastic dinghy. In case of emergency there was room for all of us. The dinghy still lay in the same place on the platform, and in the peaceful stillness of this complete isolation a daring plan was born in me. After all, the dinghy was only about thirty feet away from me. For the third time that evening I jumped into the water, waded as quickly as I could to the boat and pulled it free. Within half a minute I was back on board with the dinghy alongside. So, that was that! I began to regain some of my self-confidence. But my

uncertainty came flooding back as I heard a scraping, hissing sound. I grabbed the searchlight and shone the beam on the platform. On the edge, a sort of lid hinged open slowly and steadily. Out of the hole crawled two figures, dressed in the now familiar space suits, who pulled out some objects after them which were joined together by cables or wires. Their movements reminded me of the old-time silent films, fast and jerky. What were they doing now?

They stood on the platform and, with one hand against their ball-shaped helmets at about the height where their foreheads would be, made slow, respectful bowing movements in my direction. I understood. What a relief. It was a greeting, a friendly, respectful greeting. With quick, short paces they walked to the edge of the platform, where the bowing was repeated and emphasized, and then they stood like statues in the light of my flashlight. A strange and dramatic scene; on the Oosterscheldt a man is confronted with an alien intelligence. But the man was poorly prepared for the meeting; he was nothing more than a sailor in difficulty who could feel his legs trembling in his wet clothes. The two figures in front of me were about five feet tall and from a distance looked deceptively human-arms, head and legs, all in their proper places-but their legs were shorter than ours so that their arms reached down to their knees. Their metallic costumes were smooth and seamless. Only by the shoulders and elbows were folds to be seen. The short, heavy legs ended in broad feet that also stuck out behind, and the front part of their footwear was split in the middle. The hands were covered by supple, ribbed gloves; these were different from ours too in that not only the thumb but also the second finger was enclosed. They were heavy, clawlike hands.

A broad, gold-colored belt around each of their middles, sewn with motifs and tools, was particularly noticeable, one piece of which was dearly a hammer with a sharp striking edge. And on their right side was something that vaguely resembled a pistol. A kind of drum, wound with thin glistening thread, rested on the middle of their stomachs. The remainder of their equipment was unknown to me. I gamed the impression of immense physical strength, not only from their long, heavy arms and enormous shoulders, but also from their quick movements. The round ornaments around their heads were less transparent than I had originally thought. When the beam from my flashlight fell on them, they changed into glistening Christmas-tree balls, and only with more indirect light was it possible to vaguely make out their heads.

The silent confrontation was suddenly broken by a bud voice. "Do you understand English?" I nearly jumped out of my skin. Owing to my surprise that they could speak English, I didn't realize that they had asked me a question. The voice was totally devoid of any questioning tone. It sounded more like a statement.

"Do you understand English?" The same statement floated over the water.

"Yes, I do." "We want to thank you for the rescue of our crew member."

..... of course. Who are you?"

"We come from another solar system."

"My God," I called back. The situation was so strange that at that moment I couldn't think of anything else to say. There followed a short silence and I wondered about that strange accent which, in fact, wasn't English at all. To my ears it sounded more like Dutch, my own language. I could understand it perfectly, but I couldn't repeat a single word of what they actually said. The voice came again, and over the still dark water an unbelievable conversation began. "Is your ship damaged?"

"No, I don't think so." "Will you turn the light out?"

"All right."

"Thanks. Does the ship belong to you?"

"Have you a radio transmitter on board?"

"We would like to show our appreciation for the rescue of our crew member."

"You can do that by simply explaining some of this to me. It's just too much. How long have you been here?"

"We have been near Earth for some time."

"Why do you hide? Why haven't you tried to make contact with us?"

"Our reason is that you do not know the laws of a higher civilization."

"I don't understand."

"There is still a great deal that the people of this planet do not understand." I hesitated. How much did they know about us? "You know us well, then?"

"We have studied you for some time."

"You don't have a very high opinion of us, I gather."

"Your remark shows some insight."

"Are your people more intelligent than mine?"

"No, only more developed."

"If that's so, then I don't understand why you haven't made contact with us. You could help us."

"That would constitute a breach of the laws of nature." I shrugged my shoulders. Despite the strange situation, I began to feel more at ease. This was an unimaginably important meeting, and I began wondering how I could manage to squeeze some information out of these beings. I could learn things that man, for centuries, has only been able to guess at, and I could find out about their spaceships!

"We wish to give you something as a token of our thanks. If we give you an object with which you can prove our existence, it will surely also be worth a great deal of money. We hope that you will accept it. It is sterilized."

"What is it?"

"It is a block of inert metal that is many times stronger than your best steel and only half

as heavy. It has a superconductive structure that is so straight that current can only flow through it when a positive pole is placed directly opposite a negative pole, in line with the structure of the metal. If one of the electrodes is moved only one-thousandth of an inch, the current ceases to flow. With this structure it is possible, with correctly placed electrodes, to form a spiral current pattern, the result being that when a direct current is connected to two feed wires, a supermagnet is created with a negligible current consumption. Also, the metal has a melting point much higher? than anything known on Earth. We use this metal for the outer skin of our spacecraft. That is the gift. We hope you will accept it."

I was greatly impressed. "This is incredible. I am grateful. I expected no gifts for saving your crew member, but I imagine that your intention is to help us and I accept it with heartfelt thanks."

"We admire your unselfishness, but we must point out that the block of metal represents a far too advanced technique to be of any use to you in your research. Technically speaking, it is useless, but you are right in thinking that something else is behind it. We wish to give you proof that you are being observed by intelligent alien races, who know you so well that they are able to communicate with you, but refrain from doing so. We live in the perhaps desperate hope that people exist who, with this information, will be able to understand the reason for our reluctance."

"And what is the reason?"

"You do not have the values, the ethics, of a developed civilization. Because of this, the human race has, as yet, no chance of eternal survival. It blocks the way to cosmic integration."

I shrugged my shoulders. I had never heard of "cosmic integration." They also began to irritate me. I found them a little too arrogant.

"You regard us as children, then?"

"No. An adult does not blame a child for the fact that he is not yet grown up."

"But you do blame us for something?"

"And what is that?"

"Any English-speaking Negro, Chinese or American Indian can give you the answer."

The conversation was not going exactly the way I had imagined. I had to think of something else, and at the same time be careful that the contact was not broken. I was afraid that they would climb back into their saucer and that I would never see them again.

"I think I understand what you mean. May I ask a couple more questions? This is a once-in-a lifetime experience." "That is correct. The present generation will not have the chance again."

"Answers to my questions seem to me to be much more important than the block of

metal."

"Your insight surprises us. The answer to carefully selected questions is certainly much more important."

I was surprised that they agreed to my request so quickly and easily; they suddenly seemed much more friendly.

"In that case, I would like to know what your spacecraft looks like, and, more important, how it is powered."

"You disappoint us with this question about technical knowledge. The most dangerous natural law governing the development of an intelligent people states: a highly technological society does away with all discrimination or self-destructs. To supply technical information to a people like yourselves is a serious crime against the cosmic laws. The last thing that you need is technological information to increase the gap between your intellectual development and your almost nonexistent social development. Carry on playing with your Mars 'probes for the moment, as half of your world's population lives in poverty and hunger. The only information you need lies in the field of societal standards."

I was terribly disappointed. There went my dream of learning breathtaking technical discoveries.

"I am afraid that very few people would be interested in that kind of information."

"We are afraid so too."

"When do you think that the time will be ripe to give us information about space travel?"

"The cosmic isolation of an intelligent race can only be lifted when the minimum culture level has been reached; we call it 'social stability."

"Hmm... and this conversation, then?"

"We feel ourselves justified, because of your actions, in supplying certain small pieces of information which will set the present generation to thinking."

"What do you call a socially stable culture?"

"We could give you the answer, but we doubt that you would understand it."

"I will take that chance. It seems to be important."

"Be sure that you know what you want. This answer demands an explanation in word and **vision for at least two days.** Furthermore, you must choose between the material gift-the block of metal-and the immaterial gift in the form of information. We cannot give you both."

"I don't understand what one has to do with the other."

"There is still so much that you do not understand, but after our explanation, this question will also be answered for you.

"Are you really prepared to spend two days explaining this to me?" My tone dearly

showed my surprise.

"We are, for at least two days. A conversation of shorter duration would have no point; it is the minimum time in which we can give you the necessary information. We have all the time in the world-space travelers are never in a hurry-but we must warn you: we doubt that the information that we will give you will make your life happier, so be sure that you know what you are doing."

I shrugged my shoulders. It was dear to me that these beings were devious, but I did not intend to let this one chance in a million slip through my fingers.

"All right, what do I have to do?"

"We have a small, sterilized decompression chamber, and only from there will you be able to hear us and see our screen. Food and drink you will have to bring from your ship, which should stay here. We must warn you again: you will become wiser for this experience but not happier."

"We can leave with our ship whenever we want, right?"

"Naturally, but if you leave us it is for good, and with our blessing. All we ask now is a solemn vow from you and your wife that as long as we are here you will not contact anyone else and will do everything in your power to keep our presence a secret."

"I need to talk it over with my wife."

"Naturally." But my decision had already been made. I will not tire you with Miriam's arguments, nor with the latter part of my conversation with the aliens, which consisted only of a number of instructions regarding anchoring, lighting, knock signals and so on. The visit itself was to begin early the following morning, for which preparations were needed.

The two statues turned about and, laden with their apparatus, disappeared as quickly as they had come. As if sleepwalking, I went slowly to the bow and, as agreed, let the anchor fall onto the hard metal bottom complete with an extra piece of chain.

Soon afterwards the platform sank with a bud zooming noise under the surface of the water. A dull shock followed and the ship floated in its element once again. A short time later my brain received yet another jolt. The dead stillness of the night was broken by a terrible noise, a bud zooming combined with the screaming, howling tone of a circular saw. The anchor chain jerked tight and the surface of the water became strangely disturbed. The spaceship was acting as a submarine. We were pulled forward over a broad foam track which was lit from beneath a dull yellow-green light. The noise was unearthly and frightening. I stood, fascinated, and began to wonder what I had let myself in for.

CHAPTER 2

Aboard the Alien Spacecraft

"Good God!" Miriam's exclamation so early in the morning reflected both surprise and repulsion. In answer to my repeated knocking signals, the huge, round platform had risen again above the surface of the water and now, in broad daylight, the sight was much more impressive. The slightly domed platform lay, just as it had yesterday evening, with its edge level with the surface of the water. Its surface was for the most part as smooth as polished stone and dark gray in color with scattered patches of off white which made it appear as though someone had been throwing around bags of flour. Over this otherwise perfectly smooth surface ran innumerable ragged, charred grooves which ended in a small crater, as though something had exploded there. Nearly all the scratches and grooves ran in one direction and gave the impression that the spaceship had been grazed by enemy fire or that someone had been at work with a blow torch. All in all, it was an ominous sight, and Miriam's reaction was not very reasoning.

"Stef, please don't go. Something as alien as that can only spell trouble for Us all."

She was right, of course. There was something wrong about entering this thing, but even the latent fear from last evening and the leaden feeling in my stomach brought on by the sight of this forbidding platform were not enough to hold me back. A few moments later I was sitting on the edge of the platform, drying my feet after wading through the water, I donned my shoes and socks and, armed with sandwiches, thermos and note paper, I began to look for the opening that they had described. I had hardly taken a couple of steps when a round, safelike door slowly began to open near the edge and a small quantity of sand and water which had settied in the jomt was blown away by a stream of compressed air. I went closer and looked down through a round hole, about three feet in diameter, into a cubeshaped space about eight feet across. Once again, I heard the voice.

"Welcome on board. Be careful as you come below. The ladder is dangerous for you."

Indeed, the "ladder" was nothing more than a pole with staggered steps on either side formed to place my feet. I stopped in my descent and waved to Miriam, saying, "Don't worry. I'll be back around five o'clock. The reception has been very friendly, and it's really quite cozy in here."

Once below, I cast my eyes around the room. Unimaginably complicated equipment lined the walls and the ceiling. The only things that were vaguely familiar were huge reels and drums, wound with every possible size of cable and pipe. In the floors was a metal door that looked remarkably earthly, with a round knob in the middle over which I nearly stumbled. In one corner stood a kind of desk with rows of knobs, and above, a panoramic screen, about five feet long and three feet high, that glowed with a soft green fluorescent light. Behind the desk stood a strangely normal-looking chair with a metal frame and leather upholstery.

The voice invited me to sit and explained that the seat had unlimited possibilities for adjustment but that certain instructions from the voice would be necessary before I could be comfortably seated. "Yes, thank you. What happens now?"

"Introductions would seem to be the best way to start. Will you answer a few questions?"

"Yes, of course."

"How should we address you?" "Call me Stef."

"All right, Stef. The language we speak is not your own language, although it seems to be. It is the language of all living species in this universe. Even a plant or an animal will understand it. This language was spoken on Earth before the Babylonian confusion of tongues. You don't hear words but sounds that are directly reflected by your emotional structure, the life-field. Therefore, don't try to understand words, but listen to the reflections of your soul."

"Is that a kind of thought transference?"

"Not exactly, but you can compare it with that."

"I understand."

"How old are you?"

"I am forty-three."

"Are you in good health?"

"Yes, perfect."

"Have you a high social function?"

"High? What do you mean by high? I am the director of a business with a few hundred employees."

"So you are a representative of the directing class of the Westblock?" (husk møtet skjedde på 60-tallet)

"I don't quite understand the question. What do you mean by Westblock?"

"Let Us ask, then: are you a supporter of a free economy?"

"Yes, without a doubt."

"Now it is your turn. Would you perhaps like to see Us from dose up?"

I tensed involuntarily, and my heart began to beat faster. "I am afraid that I will get a shock if I see you."

"That is true. Nothing is more intense than a visual confrontation with another intelligent race. Do you feel strong enough not to panic?"

"Now that I know that I have nothing to fear from you, I will not panic."

"You certainly have nothing to fear from us; on the contrary, we are indebted to you. Look through the window to the right of the screen. When we turn on the light, you will

be able to look into our navigation room. Ready? Right, then, here we go."

I looked into a huge, round chamber, about forty-five feet across and nine feet high. From the decompression chamber I could see over the greatest part of the navigation area, with its vast contents of instruments and control panels. Strangely, all the instruments and panels were mounted on the floor with walkways alongside and separated by vertical metal grills that reached the roof. Everything was dark blue in color, almost black, causing a very strange lighting effect. The dominating blue-black surfaces acted as an almost invisible background against which all the white or polished metal knobs, handles and instruments stood out in dear relief as though luminous. The encompassing vertical wall of the dome looked as though it was made of glass; the highly polished material reflected strongly and gave a very strange lighting effect from the reflections. On many of the panels diversely colored lights burned, interposed by dark transparent strips on which flashes or darting lines could be seen. An imposing piece of technology. I suddenly realized that there was no sign of life whatsoever. "Well, where are you, then?"

"Prepare yourself. You may see Us now." A light came on illuminating an area directly in front of the window. I sprang back! In spite of my mental preparation, the paralyzing fear had returned quite suddenly and cold shivers ran over my scalp, through my neck and over my shoulders. On the other side of the window, in a half circle as though at a conference table, sat eight strange humanoid beings. Their faces and forms radiated as much primitive animal power as haughty intelligence superiority. I felt again the uncertainty of yesterday, a reaction to their obvious superiority and self-assurance. I am convinced that any intelligent man would have felt the same, and that this reaction is a part of our makeup. The same feeling that I did not belong here, that even these steel walls could not protect me from the mental impact made by this intelligent "pressure group" from a much higher level of civilization and development, with their fantastic knowledge, belonging to a strange, distant world. Their unearthly, somewhat animal, faces, with a dynamic expressive ability, emphasized the difference in our places of origin to such an extent that I am convinced it touches areas that to Us are still taboo, and which have been since time began. When you are unable to draw, how on earth can you expect someone else to draw a face that he has never dreamed existed? How can you create a portrait with words? My friend, Rudolf Das, who accepted the task of drawing the pictures of this book, was driven nearly to distraction by my dubious attempts to produce a good likeness, one which would demonstrate their superiority. He finally convinced me that even a photograph would not effectively convey what I had in mind. The facial expressions must be left, unhappily, to the imagination of the reader.

It was the hypnotic effect of their eyes, with their large, rectangular pupils) that made the deepest impression on me. They were the thoughtful, peaceful eyes of deep philosophical thinkers that were studying me with quizzical friendliness. Their heads were about the same size as ours, only slightly deeper toward the back; and in the middle of the skull was a bony ridge that changed into a deep groove in the center of the

forehead. It gave the impression of a skull divided into two separate compartments. Toward the back of their heads the ridge ended in a semicircular muscle formation that ran down the neck and into the shoulders, making the side view of the neck much heavier looking than ours. The same is true of the whole construction of their bodies. They were much more solidly built than we are. Their arms and shoulders, although of much the same proportions as ours, were much heavier and more muscular and, combined with the clawlike hands, gave an impression of strength that would have come a dose second to a bench vise. All this combined with their broad chests and short stocky legs made them look as though they would not even step out of the path of a gorilla!

Their muscle tissue also seemed to be different, more like solid rubber, and their thin skin followed the contours of their muscles more closely than ours. The top of the head to the back of the neck was covered with short, smooth hair that shone like the coat of a smooth, furry animal. The color of this hair was different with each of them; rust-brown, gold and silver-gray showed either separately or mixed. Their hairless skin had a pale, glasslike sheen to it. Along the edges of the face the skin showed slightly darker gray-brown than in the middle. As they turned their heads, the skin seemed to reflect the light and shade of their surroundings. This changing color effect was something that caught my attention many times. Their teeth were two seamless white strips, above and below, that closed in a scissorlike fashion. Both their teeth and the yellow-white of their eyes reflected the strange lighting in such a way that their faces looked slightly artificial. Their movements were also strange.

They could sit or stand perfectly still for much longer periods and more often than we would even attempt, but when in action, their movements were lightning fast and emphasized their

tremendous strength. They were like volcanoes. After a period of rest, they would erupt into a wave of energy and temperament that would have made a Spaniard jealous. They were wearing a kind of uniform in the form of dark-blue, silky overalls, with three-quarter sleeves and a deep V neck. Under this was a white shirt with a rather old fashioned high collar around the back of the neck. Around their waists was a broad, gold-colored belt, decorated with what seemed to be atom formations, which ran along the edge of the deep V in the neck as well, incorporating, however, still other motifs in its design. (cont.under)

The following is text for the picture of the humanoid from Iarga: *Humanoid from the planet Iarga, which is a little more than ten light-years away from Earth. Although these beings have the same origin and identity as man, and their physique is comparable in many ways, there appear to be many great differences which result from the different planetary conditions. Their planet is larger, the gravity is nearly 3g, and the atmosphere pressure is more than 7 bar with higher nitrogen and ammonia contents than our air. The average wind speed is less than ours; but the denser atmosphere in combination with heavy rains and the higher terminal velocities, sometimes cause storms that an unprotected human could not survive. To withstand these conditions, they have a short, compact physique with well-developed muscles, especially the legs; armored skulls, and deep-set eyes. Their darting movements are interposed with periods of rest, during which they only move their heads. They walk stiffly, with short steps, as if they are walking on ice.*

They were originally amphibians, and really belong in the water. Their bodies are as streamlined as that of a seal, and are covered with short smooth hair, like an otter. Their hands and feet are large and broad, and they have webs between their fingers and toes. We could not possibly compete with them in a swimming race. They are capable of killing a small whale-sort by ramming it like a torpedo, a group will then tow the catch back to the shore. (swimming).

Their sex drives are different from ours, and they find sex less important; partly because they derive less pleasure from it than we do. The population growth is slow, and they lack the sex signals of humans, such as full lips, ear lobes, pointed nose, protruding female breasts and the external male sex organ. This is why it is not necessary for them to cover their bodies as we do, their reproduction impulse is born of love and not lust. We seem to be abnormal in this respect. Their weak point is the development of their individuality. They do almost everything in groups (tribes), they think collectively and they obey the laws of their society to the letter. They live for and through the friendship and love within the group.

*cont. from above: .....*I decided to end the silent confrontation. "I'm sorry that it's taken so long to get used to the sight of you."

"We have only compliments for you. You have remarkable self-control. You demonstrated the same quality with your rescue of our crewman, for which we would

once more like to offer our thanks."

"Oh, that was nothing. When I see all the technical capabilities at your disposal, I wonder if my help was really necessary?"

"The value of an unselfish deed cannot in any way be influenced by asking afterwards if it could not have been done in some other way. As a matter of fact, your help came so quickly and efficiently that it would have been impossible for Us to have managed it in a shorter time. It was precisely this speed and efficiency that gave Us the idea that you could possibly be a man with whom we could communicate, the first communication with a representative of this world. Make sure that you realize what this conversation will demand of you. You will be speaking with a race that is far ahead of yours in evolution. This means not only an enormous technical lead, but also the same lead in mental development and inner culture. This last is the most difficult to explain and yet we must make it dear if you are to understand what social stability represents.

"We will therefore lead you, step by step, through the secrets of a highly developed culture, and we will do this by means of a holographic film which will take you to our planet Iarga. We will let you see what the world 'civilization' really means. It will be an interesting experience for you, the value of which is impossible for you to judge at this moment. But what you also cannot judge is the personal danger involved. We know the dangers and will protect you against them. The most important thing for Us is to ensure that your freedom of thought is not damaged. Freedom of thought is the essence of humanity, and if we were to damage that we would, according to our ethics, be committing a crime. Therefore, we will only convey knowledge to you, and not convictions.

"We wish no discussions. We will only answer questions when you do not understand something, and we will remain silent when you do not agree with Us. We will help you to climb the ladder of knowledge, rung by rung, first to social stability, then to the super culture and, if you can follow this, to the misty heights of cosmic integration. "We will only give you knowledge. **You must remain free to do with this knowledge what you will**. If as a result of this knowledge you should find yourself forming any convictions, do so with care. Make sure that they are lasting convictions, born of independent creative thinking, and not the sort of passing convictions that the impact of strenuous visual emotions tend to provoke. These pseudo convictions paralyze individual freedom and make men rigid and dogmatic.

"Knowledge is a material part of the human condition and, as with all material things, it can be mechanized or automated. We have at our disposal a method of teaching that utilizes a certain type of radiation. This takes place at a speed of which you never dreamed. Above your head we have fitted one of these radiation reflectors. It makes the spoken word unnecessary to a great extent. On the screen in front of you we will show our explanation in the form of a picture story, the words of which serve only to direct your attention in a certain direction; we call this fixing the concentration, but the true

source of information is the radiation. You do not have to take notes; information gamed through radiation remains locked in the memory forever.

"Experience this adventure with an open mind. Anything else will disturb your concentration. Do not become angry if we say something that goes against your principles. We have no intention of antagonizing you. If we do so, understand that it is purely a result of our ignorance regarding the many taboos and prejudices of western man."

They started the radiation device working with the film. At first I was not quite sure what was happening. I felt cold and somewhat lightheaded suddenly, a feeling comparable to having had a little too much wine. You believe you can think very dearly but you feel somewhat removed from reality. The fantastic film projection was accompanied by a rather childish description of what was to be seen. Now and then a few words brought my attention to the size of something-the height, the speed, the form or the connection between two things, and so on. An endless stream of words and short sentences formed a slender thread of explanation. The essence, the real information, reached me unnoticed, and that was a weird experience. The knowledge that these beings, through their machine, could feed information directly into my brain, strengthened my feeling that

I did not belong here. The difference between Us was too great. I was defenseless. As far as I can gather, radiated information is a combination of visual stimulants and thought transference, all of which takes place at fantastic speed. The images came in such rapid succession that at first it made me irritable, and only after some considerable time did it become dear what was expected of me. I had only to act as a relaxed spectator, who observes with interest what is happening; they did the rest. It is understandable that this type of information is not suited to the written word and therefore I have attempted to relate everything in the form of a two-sided conversation. This tends to give the impression that I was a partner in an animated discussion, but nothing is further from the truth. My function during this meeting can be compared with that of a tape recorder. The authenticity of the hologram was so fantastic that it could no longer be describe as a picture.

As long as I kept my head in the correct position, it was just like looking through a window. The three-dimensional, panoramic, color screen offered so persuasive an illusion of reality that after the first few minutes I looked behind the screen to make sure that nothing was there. The adjustment of the picture was controlled by several of the many knobs and handles on the desk in front of me. My first experience with the radiation took the form of knowing, without further instruction, which of the knobs I had to use to adjust, for example, the focus or the position of the picture on the screen. The test card, a jungle of vertical stripes, vanished and I looked into a great, black hole in the middle of which hung a blinding ball. I recoiled involuntarily, at which the picture blurred, but I quickly got control of myself. The hole was very deep; I was looking into the endlessness of the cosmos. Against the black, somewhat violet background, sewn

with thousands of stars, a gigantic, pink-white ball hung in stately beauty. The planet Iarga.

The sight was very moving. I felt as through I was really present in space and a strange emotion began to flow through me. The cloud formation was, in contrast with that of Earth, unbroken, with small, swirling patterns that caught the sunlight. The pink patches occurred where the sun was able to penetrate deeper into the clouds. Most remarkable were two gigantic, flat, concentric rings which formed a halo around the planet. They were rather like the rings of our Saturn, except that these consisted of a small inner ring and a much broader outer ring, both casting a sharp band of shadow on the clouds. There was also a large moon to be seen, with the same pockmarked surface as ours. Iarga, the home of these astronauts, is a planet in another solar system, not much more than ten light years away from US. More details of the location of the planet they would not tell me. The diameter and mass are much greater than the Earth's; the gravitational force is greater and the atmosphere is much thicker. The speed of rotation is much slower than that of Earth, so that the duration of day and night is longer, but the regular tilting of the rings around the planet change certain days into nights and certain nights into days, due to the fact that the rings reflect the sunlight.

As a result, Iarga does not have the regular pattern of day and night that we know. Because of the thicker atmosphere and higher air-pressure, which is of a different composition than ours, Iarga knows no bright sunlight, and sees nothing of the moon or stars. A permanent layer of mist exists at the higher levels of the atmosphere which filters the sunlight. The color blue only appears in lighter tints and green is more pronounced there than here, which may account for the fact that they seem to have a preference for blue in their artificial lighting. They describe the Earth as the blue planet with the blinding light, and, in contrast, Iarga as the green planet with the misty light. The living conditions are very different from those on Earth. Temperature extremes are much less than here, but when you hear that the wind speed can reach three times our maximum, and that ram and snowfall can be as much as ten times greater, and you combine this with the fact that the terminal velocity is much higher, it becomes dear that it would be very unwise for any of Us to be caught in a rainstorm on Iarga! After being informed that a fall from a height of six feet was fatal, I began to understand a little more of the reason for the physical appearance of these Iargans.

The rubbery muscle formations, armored skulls and long arms were products of very different climatic conditions than ours. There earthquakes also seemed to occur with more intensity and frequency than ours. Just as I was beginning to ask myself what the buildings on such a planet would be like, the picture changed and showed the view from a fast-moving spaceship that had just passed through the outer layer of mist around the planet. Initially, I saw only clouds: above me, the pink layer of mist that I had seen earlier; then a second, broken cloud layer which was primarily responsible for the strange, diffused light on the planet. We passed through this layer at a height of about twenty miles, and viewed from the underside it was a mixture of yellow-gray, brown and

greenish clouds that gave a very somber and threatening impression. Lastly came a cloud layer that in height, form and color, closely resembled ours, and after passing through this, I had an unobstructed view of the surface. We flew over a bright-green ocean with white wave crests.

Above the water ran an orange strip as straight as an arrow, which, separated by a white-beached horse-shoe-shaped island, split and continued in different directions. It was only when the spaceship came steadily lower that I realized what this strip was. A railway bridge! On long, slim towers, high above the water, ran a bridge as far as the eye could see. Along this bridge slim shining torpedoes moved in both directions. Their speed was only slightly less than that of the spaceship and there were far too many of them for me to count. The distance between the torpedoes was about ten times their own length, all spaced exactly alike along an eight4rack system which was divided into two layers, one above the other. I had little time to study the trains further, for we moved on.

Land came into view - a low-lying coast, split by a broad river with large adjoining lakes-and before my astonished eyes a strange, unearthly panorama unfolded. For as far as the eye could see, the land was divided by the orange railway into regular rectangles. The long torpedoes moved between huge, glass, oiltank like constructions with shiny dome-shaped roofs. Areas of green on either side of the railway looked something like prehistoric forests. The longer I studied this landscape, the more I became aware that this was ribbon development in its extreme form. The area between the buildings seemed to be used namely for agriculture, only now and then making way for an industrial complex. The camera sped on. The landscape changed and became undulating, split by walls into huge terraces which compared with the wine fields of Italy. Behind this lay mountains, and in a great bowl between the peaks a red-brown lake came into view. The machine tilted its nose steadily lower until I was able to see vertically below. Around the shores of the lake, numerous buildings were to be seen, among which were several gigantic combs.

In three places, powerful blue-white lights, flanked by orange lights, flashed. Everything pointed to the fact that the spaceship was going to land here, and just at the last second, before the picture vanished, I saw something that made me catch my breath. On the right side of the screen, low above the lake, three shiny discs hung like sentries in the air. They had the form of perfect, streamlined discuses. "I saw flying saucers!"

"You saw three of our aircraft."

"In the form of a saucer?"

"Exactly. And if you are interested, we will let you see them."

"I certainly am. Did you come here in something like that?"

"No. These aircraft have about as much in common with our spacecraft as an Indian arrow has with your Mars probe. We hope that you have more important questions to ask than about aircraft."

"Of course. Am I to understand that the glass tanks are your houses?"

"Yes, We call them house rings because they are in fact built in the form of a ring with a covered central recreation area."

"Is the whole planet built in this way?"

"Yes, all areas that are suitable for living are built in this manner." The screen showed a view of a living area from a great height."

"So you all live in the same type of house?"

"From the outside they are all the same, but inside there is great variation."

"The uniformity appalls me. Do your top men also live in the cylinders?" I had an idea, judging from the length of the trains, which I guessed were about one hundred and fifty feet, that these buildings were enormous, at least nine hundred feet in diameter and more than three hundred feet high.

"The words 'top men' suggest something of the Earth's ideas of status; you surely do not imagine that in a higher civilization, standards of justice can exist that allow status to play a part?"

"I don't see what status has to do with more variation in house building. Why not simpler, smaller houses with more privacy?" "Small houses with separate pieces of land form a system that you call 'towns,' and such inefficiency is unthinkable to Us. "Why inefficient? When you have our problem of overpopulation, you must build large cities to house all the people. We cannot afford the luxury of large areas of woodland as you can."

"What do you call overpopulation?"

"Our small country has more than three hundred people to the square kilometer, which in my opinion is quite dense." "Compared to Earth's average of twenty-five to the square kilometer, that is indeed dense. Estimate the number of people living in the area that you see here. Every ring houses about ten thousand. Work it out per rectangle."

"Ten thousand per ring?"

"Yes, and we have more square meters per person than you have." I did a quick calculation. Each rectangle contained thirty-six rings, so thirty-six times ten thousand is . . . heavens! Three hundred and sixty thousand! I hadn't expected that. It made each rectangle a complete city! But, then, it was also a lot of land. "How long is the rectangle?"

"Roughly ten kilometers." I judged that the width must then be in the region of six kilometers, so that an area was then sixty square kilometers and therefore my solution must be 600 people per square kilometer. "I was certainly mistaken about your population - 600 per square kilometer. That's double ours. I was under the impression that it was much less. When I see the space that you have left, I must admit that it is a very clever solution."

"Your answer amuses Us because you have made a small mistake. You have the decimal point in the wrong place." I calculated again and came to the ridiculous total of six thousand. "It can't be six thousand."

"It is, Stef. What you see here houses a population of six thousand people to the square kilometer."

"But that's ridiculous. How can you do it? That's twenty times as many as our overpopulated land."

"Your word 'overpopulation' is pure nonsense. Our planet has a population density at least one hundred times greater than yours and we do not speak of overpopulation."

I began to feel uneasy, that was madness. I knew it. I should never have started this conversation. It was leading nowhere. I stared with new interest at the picture in front of me and tried to calculate the living space of these people. Strange as it may seem, there were no signs of overpopulation. On the contrary, there was room enough, round the cylinders, and the roads that ran through the woodland areas were in no way obstructed with people or traffic. "This is so incomparable with anything that we know that I am at a loss for words."

"That is the right attitude. With this confrontation with a totally different world, with totally different standards and a totally different philosophy, we are trying to make it dear that you must not draw comparisons. Doing so prevents you from understanding this world and its level of civilization. Forget your own world and try to understand what is happening here. Try, without prejudice, to follow our explanation, as this alone will be difficult enough. "The reason for our dense population is the small area of dry-land on our planet. Iarga is almost completely covered with water forming deep oceans, which leaves Us with a surface area of dry-land which can be compared to the area of Australia, and this is distributed over numerous islands. We were faced with the problem of feeding and housing the billions of beings which we needed in order to achieve our creation goal, on the smallest possible area of land. This imposed the greatest demands on our planning and social systems; these demands do not occur on Earth, you have room to spare.

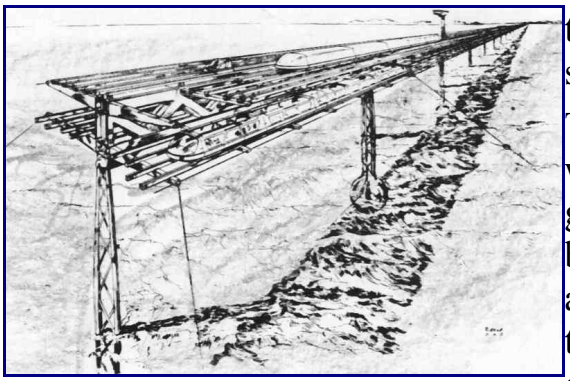
"What we needed to create a high level of culture were three things: freedom, justice and efficiency. We will explain these concepts one at a time, beginning with the last, efficiency. "You are shocked by the size of our population, but the space surprises you. Strange, eh? It is not so strange when you realize that you are not shocked by the number of people but by the space that is left over in what to you is a ridiculously overpopulated world. You are shocked by our efficiency. To Us, it is the most normal thing in the world, because without this concept, we simply could not exist. Without efficiency, our world would immediately collapse. You will continually come up against this concept in our explanations because we must make it dear to you how carefully each of the three concepts-freedom, justice and efficiency - we had to employ to reach the level of civilization that can be called stable. "Also, justice is a condition for efficiency.

For example, if houses play a part in showing a difference in status between people, then justice fails, and efficiency in a setting such as this is impossible. It demands, therefore, a different, more social way of life." This was roughly the beginning of the explanation of the concept of efficiency, and I absorbed it with some difficulty. Who would expect the description of a super culture to begin with a lecture on efficiency? Anything but that! And it is almost impossible to relate just how efficient they were. Take, for example, their method of planning. It is simply based on the maximum number of people that a given land-area can accommodate. The housing and the roadways take up the smallest possible area-not more than five percent-in order to leave a maximum of land for farming and natural beauty. The farming areas produce the maximum in food that their technique allows, in order to support their huge population. The woodland areas are necessary to maintain a sufficient quantity of oxygen in the atmosphere and also serve as recreation areas. Everything is used to maximum advantage.

What would you imagine to be the mode of transport of a super culture? You think perhaps supersonic aircraft or rockets, and hovercraft type ships or hover-cars? Out of the question. Anything so inefficient, with so many moving parts which can wear out and require so much maintenance, would be madness on Iarga. What do they use, then? Very simple. A fully automatic, robot rail system. Slim torpedo trains that move without creating friction, the only component requiring servicing being the doors, and these are made of such a high quality that they can last at least one hundred years. As a well-brought-up Earth man, I didn't give up too easily and pointed out that our aircraft, so fast and comfortable, were surely much better than trains that can only reach a speed of about four hundred kilometers per hour. I got the most surprising answers. An aircraft is not only inefficient but is downright antisocial!

They only appear on a planet where status still exists, and they are only for the upper classes, because they are useless as a medium of mass transport and the cost per passenger-kilometer is at least ten times that of their rail system. They began to talk about transport capacity. The six-lane rail system between the house blocks (only the upper layer) can transport one million persons per hour operating at maximum capacity. Did I think that aircraft could compete with this?

No, I did not. Confronted with such astronomical figures as these, further argument is pointless. They were not yet finished. Did I really think that their transport was slower than ours? Yes, I did get that impression. Well, I was very wrong. I must think in terms of average speed, and the hours that we wasted waiting for connections, delays caused by unservice-ability or bad weather and our wonderfully inefficient trafficjams! Having thought of all this, I was readily prepared to believe them when they said that their average speed of all transport systems together was about five times higher than ours - inclusive aircraft. Had I mentioned something about comfort? Yes, I had.Wonderful, because comfort was also an aspect of efficiency. Trains had proven to be the cheapest form of transportation, and the only problem that remained was to get as many people as possible to leave their cars at home and use the tram. The only way to do this was



through comfort, and this comfort was really something.

These trains were shock free and silent, apart from wind noise. Due to their position high above the ground and their large windows, they offered a breathtaking view of the surrounding countryside, and the interior was so luxurious that it left nothing to be desired. They were unaffected by weather conditions and one hundred percent reliable. The frequency was so high that timetables were unnecessary. Did I now know enough? Absolutely not! It had gradually become dear to me that their understanding of efficiency was totally different from ours. It influenced their very souls. Efficiency had become almost a religion. One of the most imposing visions on the screen was their trans-oceanic rail connections. A wonderful, orange-colored construction, about seventy-five feet above the restless green water, crossing the ocean in a dead straight line. I thought at first, perhaps a little naively, that the support towers stood on the ocean floor, but no-nothing so primitive. The whole construction floated, supported by huge balls under the towers which were anchored to the sea bed by adjustable cables.

The balls were placed at a depth where the water always was comparatively peaceful, unaffected by the conditions on the surface. The question that intrigued me was how the trains could function without friction and wear. I discovered that it was not so difficult once superconductive materials and supermagnets, the same sort of materials that were used for the outer skin of their spaceships, were used. The train was supported on magnetic shoes over its whole length which ran in a hollow rail. Through the polarity and the strength of the magnetic field, the shoes were held floating in the middle of the rail. A fantastic piece of construction. The system was controlled from large electronic control centers and was almost fully automatic. Optical signaling was not used, so that the speed was unaffected by even the thickest fog. Their cargo trains intrigued me the most, for they were in fact nothing more or less than self-homing containers. The route program was plugged into the nose of the unit and the ghost train left on its journey without a living sour on board, finding its own way over the rail network to its destination, silent and vibrationless, and without lighting at night.

Some things were rather amusing. There seemed to be a rather popular pastime that they called traveling in hotel trains. A group of about twenty-five people would order a unit that was fitted out as a self-service hotel and simply go where the mood took them. Everywhere in the beauty spots were "campings," where the trains could stay for a couple of days or more, and all you needed to do to travel further was to program the unit for its next destination. Traveling this way, often at night, they could cover enormous distances. As soon as I asked a question that fell outside the program, I received more of their strange answers. "Can everyone afford to go on in this way?"

"No, nobody can afford it, **because we have no money**, but everyone can go on holiday

in this way if they wish."

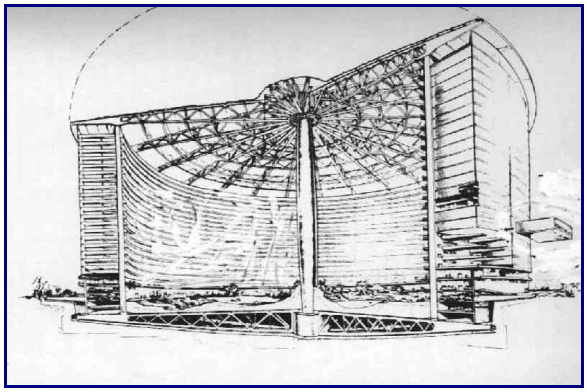
At my request, they showed me one of their cars. In front of one of their huge, glass living cylinders stood a highly streamlined vehicle on ridiculously small wheels; nevertheless, it could be classed as a motor car. My enthusiasm for motor cars was suddenly diverted by the sight of two Iargan women who, accompanied by four small children, were to demonstrate the car. I sat staring at those strange exotic beings so intensely that the explanation about the car was for the most part lost on me. Their faces were smoother and finer than the astronauts' and they were made up with white and purple stripes on their fore heads and around their eyes. It made me think of Indians on the warpath, and this thought was strengthened by the colorful motifs on their clothing. This 'clothing' seemed to be more for decoration than anything else. It was just a broad piece of cloth with a hole in the middle that fell over the head and was fastened at the waist with a broad belt, leaving the arms and the sides of the body uncovered. Under this garment, they wore a pair of silky trousers which fastened tightly around the ankles. The shoes over the wide naked feet were open sandals. They carried themselves as refined models would, demonstrating the peculiarities of the car with lightening fast movements. The strangest thing was that their explanation, which I found inaudible, was directed at me, and due to the perfection of the picture I felt as though I was actually present and the center of their attention. "Is this the way your women normally dress?"

"We are showing you two mothers with their children, on their way to a recreation area, and we will follow them with the camera. They are wearing holiday clothing, fitting for a day out. We do not find clothes so important and as we do not have any other films on this subject, please confine your attention to the automobile."

The ladies had, in the mean time, entered the car with their restless offspring, and were demonstrating the maneuverability of the vehicle on its tiny wheels. These wheels only served the purpose of transporting the car from the cylinders to the rail system where, in contrast to the trains, they hung on magnetic shoes under the rails instead of above. This explained the large glass panel that extended under the feet of the occupants of the front seat, giving the vehicle the appearance of a helicopter from a frontal view. The interior was luxurious-two wide three-seat benches, and behind, the baggage space. There was only one sliding door on one side, and nowhere could I discover any access to the motor. After this demonstration, the ladies rode away along a broad, ocher- colored road, to where the huge central rail system ran between the house cylinders. The huge "motorways," which looked like thin orange lines from the air, were in fact a three-level road and rail system carrying heavy traffic at unimaginable speeds. The top level was a six-track rail system which carried the long torpedoes, the four inside tracks for fast, long-distance traffic, and the two outer tracks for local traffic.

The other two levels were for the cars, again using the outer tracks for slow, local traffic and the inner tracks for higher speeds and longer distances. The stations were huge, cross-shaped buildings through which the car-tram tracks passed in tunnels. At ground level, around these stations, was a huge bading terminal for the transfer of freight from

the rail containers to the wheeled transport. The camera continued to follow the fantastic journey along the rails and the two ladies who were at the moment playing with their children. The voice called my attention to the house cylinders. The first thing noticeable from dose up is the perfectly smooth exterior, with neither grooves nor joints in evidence. The different floors were visible only as creamy-white bands of about three feet in height, on which rested glass panels about fifteen feet high and sixty feet wide. The panels were met by anthracite-gray pillars that ran from top to bottom throughout the whole building. "Isn't it rather warm, all that glass in your houses, cars and trains?"



"No, because it is not ordinary glass at all, but a combination of glass and plastic. It contains two electrically conductive layers with which the transparency can be regulated to give a greater or lesser reflective quality." The hologram images crossed a broad river, and I could see thousands of Iargans walking along its banks. I also saw hundreds of small boats braving the strong winds and stormy water. They were catamaran type constructions, with streamlined cabins supported on legs above the water. The hulls were almost completely submerged, and the strangest thing was that the rough water seemed to have no effect on them. They were fast and made no bow waves.

(Picture text: Cross cross-section of one of the floating and rotating house-cylinders. The construction is so stable that despite the heavy Iargan earthquakes, the framework (base, wall, and roof) has a minimum useful life of more than a thousand years. The plastic flats (apartments)(20 x 20 x 6 meter) are removable horizontally. The diameter of the building is more than 300 meters, the height is 135 meters. It provides housing for 10,000 persons, each with so m2 to themselves, plus a part of the heated communal garden. The smooth exterior is necessary in connection with the strong winds and the rainfall. Comfort and labor saving have been perfected to such a point that the housewife is freed from housework, but the protection and comfort of the house-cylinders has become subordinate to the creation of the possibility of numerous "human" contacts in the utmost freedom.)

The camera allowed me no time for further study. The landscape changed, the ground became undulating and in the distance high mountains borne in the misty, liazy light of Iarga. The cylinders in their oblong formations continued as far as the eye could see into the foothills and even beyond where the ground was terraced off with long, high walls. As the ground became more mountainous, the buildings stopped, as did the roadway, but the railway continued on through the wild and rocky landscape. The rest of the journey became real science fiction. Like a giant snake, the railway wended its way around mountain peaks and over deep ravines, across fantastic suspension bridges and along vertical rock walls, now over gaping depths and then over grassy, woody plateaus, and in every suitable spot were the stations and the parking areas for the cars. This was one

huge recreation area, with its rugged mountains and beautiful waterfalls.

Just as we were approaching a large, green mountain lake with nearby buildings, the picture faded and was replaced by the now familiar view of the Iargans' living areas, but I saw it now through different eyes, eyes which had begun to notice the wonderful perfection of this strange world; a world that sustained its huge population through utmost efficiency; a world without refuse, smells, exhaust gases, traffic jams and noise.

I also began to understand a little of something else, and that was the justice that they were always talking about. Although I had only just begun to become acquainted with this distant culture, I understood that everyone here had equal rights. They lived in the same houses, rode in the same cars and stepped into the same trains. There were neither rich nor poor; there was no separation between nationalities, races or colors.

This must be a universally governed planet, but seemingly so strictly governed that everything was streamlined and standardized. What a terrible thought! I had no idea then that my horror at the thought of such monotony was soon to change into longing.... I began to wonder what the millions of miles of railroad must have cost; it was certainly a triumph of engineering. "Can you give me some idea of what such a transport system costs?"

"That is difficult. We know roughly what a dollar represents in production ability, but to translate that into the cost of a transport system... well, we can only guess. For one billion dollars you would not get much farther than three miles."

"Can't it be done for less?"

"Naturally, but then we would have to make concessions with quality, and that is not our method of working. Such a system can only exist if it is built to last for centuries, otherwise we would constantly be repairing it."

"We'd never be able to afford such quality."

"You see it in front of you. What you need is not a vault full of banknotes, but production capacity. Only a society with a completely efficient economic system can realize such things for itself."

"But can all this be compared to the communist system that we have on Earth?"

"Our cosmic universal economic system can be compared to both communism and the capitalist Western economy. One can also say that our cosmic economics can't be compared with either."

"If we don't have this system on Earth, how can you call it universal?"

"It is only through this system that a race can achieve a cultural level of social stability. And from there onward toward immortality. It is the cosmic condition, based on natural laws."

"What's your definition of culture, then, exactly? I'm beginning to think that we define the word differently."

"That's a very important question, Stef. Culture is the measure through which a society caters to the least fortunate man. The measure in which the sick, invalid, old or poor people are taken care of. In short, the measure of collective unselfishness." "But what has this got to do with immortality?"

"Just this, that unselfishness makes an intelligent race immortal. But before you can understand this, you will first have to climb the ladder with Us to the misty heights of comic integration."

"Unbelievable! I thought that you practiced efficiency as a sort of religion, but now I see that your economic system is a religion of sorts as well."

"You are beginning to understand, but the word 'religion' is not well chosen."

"Something like it, then?"

"Correct."

"Do you mean that to start with we should build a world with this standard of efficiency and quality?"

"We do not remember ever having suggested that you should build rail systems and cylindrical houses, nor have we said that your population should become as large as ours. You are again needlessly creating comparisons, which you should not do, for it leads you nowhere. Try only to understand how we have used the three essentials of higher culture-freedom, justice and efficiency-in our world, and what culture really is to Us. Only then will you be able to understand our answer to the great question that you have asked."

CHAPTER 3

Planet Iarga

After the Iargans had explained their concept of efficiency, they turned without pause to their ideas of justice. In the same relentless and efficient manner, I was pumped full of the laws upon which they based their social and economic system in a very short time. The main theme was the same: the efficiency of the justice. It's interesting to fully understand what a cosmic universal economic system is. They explain it as follows: an economic plan, aimed at efficiently satisfying man's needs so that he is released from the tyranny of material things over his daily life. In other words, if everyone has everything at his disposal, then the acquisition of material goods is no longer of paramount importance. This can only be achieved by providing "equal shares for everyone"; otherwise envy will always exist. The culture then becomes more or less stable. I nodded in agreement; mankind released from material problems, no envy or greed, that was an answer.

Only one small problem: how is it done? A little magic perhaps? There are only two solutions: everyone must own the same; or no one must own anything. The last is the most efficient. I sat bolt upright in my chair. Were they telling me, a well-to-do company director, that I must dispense with personal property? These beings were pure communists! It was useless to carry on this conversation; it was getting me nowhere. I sat wondering if I should voice my displeasure, but the explanation continued with the following hypothesis: consequently, because money is an unmistakable form of property, it should be abolished. They went even further. Personal property is an indication of a very primitive level of culture. We had enough intelligence to build rockets, but not enough to see that the laws of the survival of the fittest and might is right must be abolished. Perhaps I could explain to them how I thought we could survive with such a system. Because though ours was a highly interesting system, what they had found here in discrimination beat anything that they had ever encountered before.

Earth people seem to be continually occupied with thinking of new discriminations, and using them as solutions to the ones that already exist. Someone could not formulate any social or political plan without someone else immediately attacking it. I really must not blame the spacemen when they said that all this useless talking, the continual working against one another, made them laugh. On the other hand, it was more terrifying than amusing that power had now been added to this difference in insight in the form of an atomic-weapon arsenal which had an unimaginable destructive and poisonous effect. And all this under the control of a few buttons! How was it possible that we could still sleep peacefully? One learns to live with things that are impossible to change. What a foolish idea; of course it was possible to change things. All we had to do was to stop discriminating, simply change our laws. The concept of private property, of course, stood in our way. But surely we could sort that out. .... .1 didn't think so. Abolish

personal possessions? Never would that work. While we are all quite willing to improve the world, it had to begin with our neighbor.

Surely even a selfish man can understand that a world without discrimination would be a better place in which to live. Perhaps we could even create a prosperity that, universally speaking, could be ten times better than that of the present? That they could understand. It was a pity that the communistic ideals were lost in inefficiency, otherwise they could have done a lot of good. It was a case of state-controlled economic leaders making the decisions. My humor improved considerably; they were not communists after all. But what were they, then? I will try, briefly, to explain their system, as far as I was able to understand it.

The total production of goods and services is, on Iarga, in the hands of a very small number of huge companies, the "trusts." These are huge organizations with millions of employees, active over their whole planet. There are primary trusts, which distribute directly to the consumer, and secondary trusts, which supply the primary. **Nothing is paid for on Iarga,** only registered. W*hat a consumer uses is registered in the computer center in each of the house cylinders, and this may not exceed that to which he has a right. These computers are coupled to the huge shopping centers in each of the cylinders. You cannot buy anything. Large and expensive things, such as houses, cars, boats, valuable artifacts, and so on, can only be hired. They call this the right of acquisition. Less expensive things are not hired because that is not efficient. They are registered for their total value and the right of use remains for life. This is almost the same as personal ownership, except that in the event of death, the goods are returned to the trusts. The last category is articles for consumption and public services. Their total value is registered, at which point right of usage becomes yours*.

As far as goods are concerned, you may not have more "in stock" than is reasonable for your own use, otherwise the surplus can be confiscated. It is practically the same sort of thing as a bank account, except that they place the control on the expenditure, whereas we place it on the income. This difference is worth a lot of thought. Legally, all the goods remain the property of the trusts that supplied them. This means not only that the trust is responsible for the upkeep, repair and the guarantee of a certain minimum life, but they also take the total risk of loss or destruction. Thus, all the articles are made to such a high standard that repair is never necessary; repairs are not only expensive but terribly inefficient. Insurance companies and repair firms would make a poor living on Iarga! The trusts work on a cost-price basis whereby our term "profit" is replaced by "the cost of continuation." Each trust was constantly occupied with improving and expanding its production. Their economy was as stable as a rock. They showed me two of their fully automatic factory complexes, one that produced cars and another that produced the trans-oceanic rail bridges.

The star-shaped building had a diameter of about one kilometer and the area around the factory was a maze of rails supporting hundreds of their freighttorpedos which entered the building at the points of the star. The film then moved to the factory's interior. The

points of the star contained the automatic unbading system that emptied the trains of their raw materials, and this was the first time that I was able to hear original sounds. Strange hollow knocking, interposed with screeches and clicks, it was an inferno of noise that echoed strangely in the small metal chamber in which I was sitting. The same realistic effect as the film itself; left, right, above, below; I heard the sounds exactly as if I had been present when they were made, and I began to hear exactly which machine was making a particular noise. The size of the machine park was indescribable. Boilers, collectors, hinging lids, ovens with white-hot metal, presses that belched steam each time they opened; huge horseshoe shaped sections with high-voltage insulators and spark-spitting machines. Small, delicate machines turned, twisted or juggled with their products.

I saw a few Iargans at work, dressed in orange colored overalls with space-suit like helmets on their hs which left only the mouth and nose uncovered; there were never more than about 40 workers outside the control room. The production lines converged towards the middle of the factory and it became dear that this factory produced automobiles. The most sinister, I found, were the metal claws that functioned exactly the same way as a human hand and arm. They were mounted on a system of arms and made movements exactly as a living being would; large ones moved slowly, and small ones moved at lightening speed, exactly synchronized with the placing of a part. The machine completed its task piece for piece until a complete product emerged at the end of the line, faultless, fast, and untouched by "human" hand. It was mostly the claws that gave the impression that this monster with all its noise, had an intellect of its own. The two production lines joined exactly in the middle of the star, the complete under section of the car, complete with wheels, seats, steering and controls was joined in one operation to the upper section with glass, doors and the rail skis. Here I saw the most impressive battery of arms and claws, the finished automobiles were picked up by the skis, swung round, and placed onto the rail system exactly next to the previous one, with only a few millimeters between them.

The camera rested for a while on this end phase, and it began to dawn on me just exactly what this machine was capable of doing. This kilometer long monster that knew no failure, turned raw material into a finished automobile at the rate of one every twenty seconds! or four thousand five hundred per day. When my noise-numbed brain registered this, I got a rather strange feeling in my stomach; this was inhuman! They were also "kind" enough to show me another factory that produced the trans-oceanic rail bridges, but I will spare you the details. The need to continually write in superlatives tends to bring aversion, my comments can be condensed into one word, terrible! How the Iargans can develop and build such mechanical monsters is a mystery to me. They also thought it desirable to show me the robot production of the houses; even a nonefficient Earth man could surely under-stand something of the advantages of standardization. I thanked them kindly for the offer, but I had seen enough of all that automation, where Iargans only checked to see that everything was working properly. I

was quite prepared to accept the fact that they could build houses fully automatically. They were disappointed, but perhaps I would like to see how they assembled the units into the huge cylinders? Okay, the, just to please them.

-
Iargan family-life.
IARGANS are very connected to each other - always stays close together. A amph.race w. group-conciousness.
How do Iargans build their houses? This efficiency began to tickle my sense of humor. They began by building a factory, on site, and placed in it one of the mechanical monsters that produced the complete, ready-for-use, plastic housing units. Each unit was roughly sixty by sixty feet and eighteen feet high, completely finished with glass, furniture, household machines, communication system, and so on, divided into two layers or floors. On the site itself lay, in the ground, a huge, star-shaped rib construction with a diameter of more than nine hundred feet. Just as the roofs of the cylinders were domed, so was the foundation, but with the convex side under, like a half discus. The ribs were joined in the middle to a huge ring, the depth of the ribs at this point being approximately sixty feet. The plating on the under-side of the ribs was dark grey and looked rather like the skin of their spaceships. On this "saucer" foundation a massive cylinder with a steel frame was built, filled in with something that looked like black concrete, the whole construction having a diameter of approximately eight hundred feet and a wall thickness of approximately nine feet. The whole construction was covered by the domed roof which seemed to be almost as strong as the foundations, only this roof was covered by glass.

On the out side of this cylindrical wall were rows of heavy support beams, onto which the house units were placed, each unit fitting perfectly against the insulated surfaces of its neighbor. If one of the units should be damaged at any time, for example by fire, then it was simply removed and a new one put in its place. A wonderful piece of engineering. The "working life" of these constructions was calculated to be at least *one thousand years.*

"When I hear you continually talking about quality and a useful life of thousands of years, and a rail system that can stand for hundreds of years, I get the feeling that your plans for the future make ours, which only take into account the next twenty or thirty years, look like child's play," I told them during a break in the film.

"The explanation is not difficult," a spokesman answered calmly. "A race that lives under the constant threat of war and destruction does not logically make any plans for the distant future. For an absolute race, that is different. The continual improvement of our mental capacity directs our thoughts more and more into the future. We have created a planet on which our race can survive for an eternity. We live in a stable world on a

clean planet, where the balance of nature can be maintained for unlimited time. We live for the future, because we expect great things from it. We are constantly occupied with making our world a better place to live in. The Earth, on the other hand, lives for the present and the past, and does not worry about the future generations."

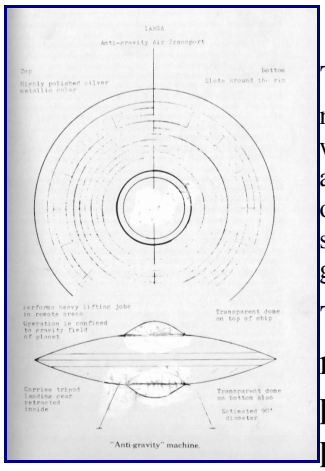
"Remarkable, this farsighted concern for future generations."

"When you understand what a super culture represents, you will share our concern."

I was delighted when they agreed to my request to see one of their flying saucers. I cherished the hope that we might also become capable of constructing such a machine, but, alas, the technique was so advanced that I was unable to understand the first thing about it. It was a beautiful, polished, silver, streamlined discus, about ninety feet in diameter, with a domed glass pane) above the below in the middle. There were slots around the rim on the underside, and when the machine flew low over the ground, I could see dust being blown up. I thought at first that this was caused by air pressure, but they explained that it was due to the "ground echo" from the antigravity machine. It was astounding to see just what these machines could do. They showed me the transportation of a rail section to an inaccessible mountain area. The saucer lifted the heavy section on two steel cables and transported it effortlessly over the mountains. It was maneuverable in all directions, and could, even in a storm, hover motionlessly in the air. It was equally capable of operating either in the atmosphere or outside it. In answer to my remark that it was surely, then, a spaceship, I was told that they were confined to the gravitational field of the planet.

Gravity was their only means of returning to the surface. One therefore had to be careful not to fly fast enough to exceed the escape velocity, which would then necessitate rescue by a real spaceship. *My request to be allowed to see one of their spaceships was politely refused; perhaps at the end of our conversation.* They felt that we had much more important things to discuss than technique. They thought that they had sufficiently described the production facilities and the investment capacity of their trusts, and that I would now be interested in their structure. To be quite honest, I had at the moment very little interest in structures. A society without personal ownership was all very well and good as a curiosity, but I did not see any practical use for it.

I was later to regret my attitude, for the efficiency of radiation information is dependent on the interest of the "student," and because of my lack of interest, I missed an important part of the organizational structure. I remember only a small part of it. The system worked with divisions and branches that were as far removed from one another, geographically, as possible, and allowed for automatic production. At the head of each trust was a president who was a member of the production group of the world government. The trusts competed with each other, and the prices were determined by the law of supply and demand, the principle of the free market. Their cost price was computed on the standard work hour, the ura.(cont. Under)



Text for UFO-drawing: Small disc-shaped anti-gravity air vehicles observed were not capable of flight outside of a gravity field. They were a beautifully polished silver in color, were highly streamlined, and were about 90 feet in diameter with a transparent dome above and below in the center. There were slots around the rim on the under side. The performance of these vehicles was astounding. They were observed 'lifting whole sections of the rail system structure into place in mountainous areas with ease. Their operation is confined to the gravitational field of a planet.

Text. Cont. Here: My question as to how they calculated the cost of natural resources was answered by saying that **in a society where personal ownership did not exist, natural resources were, in principle, free.** This meant that the price was calculated from the cost of winning, processing and distribution.

"How can a trust that works on a cost-price basis sell gold, for example, which, due to the law of supply and demand, represents a much higher income than its cost price?" I asked.

"You use gold as an example, but there are many scarce articles that represent a profit far above the cost price. This is not a problem. The trusts simply absorb this extra profit and use it to subsidize other articles in the production scheme. Careful central planning can also influence the law of supply and demand."

"Surely that can be done by advertising?" Then they really went to town! What we did under the guise of "advertising" and "public relations" was something that bordered on indecency. The money and manpower-in other words, potential prosperity-that we limit for a nonefficient brain. Can you imagine what these Earth people thought of now? Artificial aging! A continual stream of seemingly new models compelled our status-symbol oriented society to discard things before they had reached the end of their useful life. A terrible waste of raw material and production capacity, and, even worse, it was a stimulant for jealousy and greed, and this was criminal. This promotion of materialism, a deadly danger for an intelligent race, was directly opposed to any idea of justice. I thought they were finished, but their most remarkable argument was yet to come. Our advertising was a despicable form of propaganda which was ethically unacceptable. In a socially stable society, you had not only freedom of speech, but, even more important, freedom of thought. Propaganda, repeated one-sided information, damaged the freedom of thought, and that was unacceptable discrimination. My tentative question as to how they could practice competition without advertising initiated another detailed explanation. Competition exists only through the free choice of the consumers, and has nothing to do with trying to influence that choice, as we try to do with advertising. They influenced this choice (naturally!) much more efficiently.

On Iarga, there are two worldwide consumer organizations, which are responsible for all market research. They examine the usage value of all the goods and services and inform the public in the most objective manner about the available assortment. They stimulate the trusts to produce the goods that are needed. The trusts are not permitted to advertise

or exert any influence on the consumer, as this could never be objective. Thus the choice is not made by inexpert or unprice-conscious persons but by experts with test facilities at their disposal. When, for example, they see that it is necessary that the public have a choice of five different types of television sets, then they insure that these are produced.

I didn't believe a word of it! From what I had seen on Iarga, there was no choice at all. Everything seemed the same, cars, houses, trains, and so on. They were afraid that I had failed to understand anything of what they had told me. "The presidents of the two trusts are a part of the central planning group of the world government. This group attempts to lead the race to the goal of a culture. To begin with, they must, by means of production adjustment, dispense with the law of supply and demand, and thereafter create a situation of unbridled prosperity, so that no one is troubled any more by material things. As a result this group also stimulates the mental development of the race. Take, for example, the cars and houses. There comes a time when the cultural level has reached a point where these no longer function as status symbols. What then influences the choice of the public? Two things, mainly: comfort and price. Maximum comfort and low production cost can only be achieved with robot automation. And what happens then? Everyone chooses the most efficient car and the most efficient house and so the development proceeds. "Another thing that has a great influence on consumption is the general interest in the conservation of natural resources. A race that lives for the future is concerned with the utmost efficient use of natural resources, because the longer the planet is inhabited, the scarcer these become. The presidents of the consumer trusts have a great influence in these things, because they have public opinion behind them."

"All right, I understand the relationship between the trusts and the public, but, now, how much does such a president earn as compared to the lowest paid worker?"

"The question is not easily answered. The goal of the universal economic system is naturally the leveling of income, but that is not possible in the early stages of social stability. A material reward must be offered to stimulate a greater personal effort. A similar reward must also be offered to stimulate young people to complete the long studies necessary to reach high technological development, or to induce people to work harder or to accept more responsibility. "You must begin by determining a social minimum that everyone always receives and you must attempt to establish security for everyone, young and old. Women also have a right to their own income; the social minimum must be free of any discrimination. You must also determine that the maximum and the combined income for a man and wife can never exceed four times the determined minimum."

"Do you think that you could find presidents here who would be willing to accept such a modest income?"

"Of course, as long as the minimum is high enough. A president and wife earn, for example, eight uras and the minimum is then two uras."

"How do you cope with general costs, the kind that we pay for with taxes?"

"They are calculated in the price of consumer goods and services."

"Doesn't this make the price rather high?"

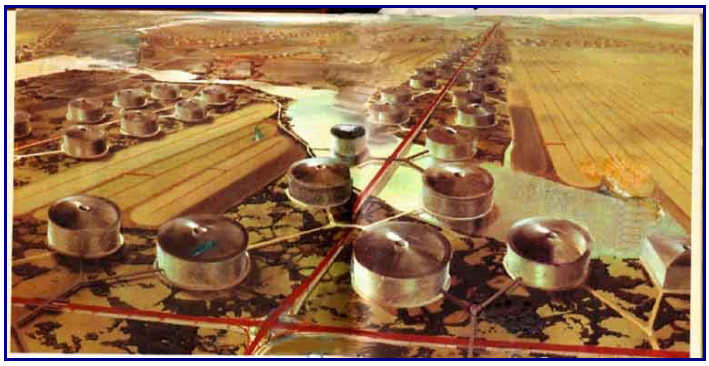
"Now you are thinking in terms of money and payment, while on Iarga, money does not exist and nothing is paid for. What **we conveniently call "price" is in fact purely a method of expressing the production time demanded by a certain article, and is** only used to determine the distribution of prosperity. When you ask if the prices are high, you really mean to ask if there is a lot available to us, if we are rich or poor. In fact you are asking about the production level per head of the population, and compared to Earth's standards, this is very high. **The answer is, we are all rich. The universal economic system that exists by a great many intelligent races, does not concern itself with money, possession, or payment. The aim of this system is to free the people from material influences and motivation; and in contrast to the Earth's economy**, this system is very simple, it can be explained in a couple of minutes. "The explanation is indeed simple, but it must be accompanied by one or two marginal notes. It appears to be a socialist heaven, and as such is rather misleading. Earthly Marxism makes the fault of thinking that all people are good, and that only their social and economic situation makes them "bad"; change their situation and the problem is solved. If only this were true. Every intelligent race is dualistic, and as absolute necessity, contains an extremely evil consciousness component that now and again comes to the surface in the form of lies, deceit, sadism, homicide, etc. etc. One of the reasons for the terrible murder of millions of women and children in gas chambers.

"A detailed explanation will come later, so let it suffice here to say that beings on Iarga that possess this mentality are denied reincarnation. This selection is the cause of the continuing improvement in mentality, generation after generation, which enables a race to become unselfish. "On Earth, this selection was blocked some twenty centuries ago by extra-terrestial intervention whereby we cannot improve our average mentality. This system is therefore unsuitable and undesirable for us because it would stimulate the egoism. The lazy and the profiteers would disrupt the system. The universal economic system is just an utopian dream for us. "The beginning of this system is their worldorder. The unity of such a race comes from the fact that they obey a set of Godly laws and therefore have a uniform legal system. Add this to their love of travel, which results in the mixing of the races, and the result is the disappearance of nationalism, which happened long ago. The total production of all goods and services is controlled by globally operating trusts or cooperatives, the presidents of which form the world-government. These are not so much economic as political formations that perform most of the tasks that fall here under governments and ministries.

"The consumers cooperations comment on the performance of the trusts and so stimulate the assortment and availability. Once this situation has been reached, there is not much left to be written in a book on economics. The only thing that could be entered is any idea to improve the systems product efficiency *which will reduce the amount of servile labor.* They regard this kind of work as a waste of time. "Appropriately, they use the

term: welfare efficiency of the working population. The theoretical maximum of 100% could be reached when the total working population should take part in the direct production process of goods and services, with the highest attainable level of automation and the highest possible quality and durability. This maximum is obviously never reached, and the welfare efficiency is always below 100%. The higher the figure the larger the availability of goods and services, and the greater the prosperity. The three determining factors are:

"1. The occupation factor shows the percentage of the working population that takes part in the direct production process of goods and services in the public sector. Here it may be useful to list the professions that do not exist on Iarga or that fall outside the direct production process: banks, insurance companies, stock exchange, lawyers, sales organizations, public relations....(cont.under)



Text for picture of housing complexes:
The ring-shaped housing complexes, looking much like huge glass silos, are about 900 feet in diameter by 300 feet high, and they accommodate about 10,000 Iargans each. The central core structure is built up complete as a single unit and the apartments are installed on the outside which results in the glass-like finish. These circular housing units are arranged in rectangular cities about 10 kilometers by 6 kilometers wide encompassing up to 36 such units. The resulting population density is as high as 6000 persons per square kilometer.

View of an automatic farming machine which is controlled from a central post. The unit works a piece of land 250 wide and 10 Km long. Fertilizers and sprays are introduced via the central rail and administered by means of a rolling tank. At the end of the rails, the whole unit turns through 18o degrees and returns over the parallel strip of ground. No poisonous sprays or artificial fertilizers are used on Iarga, the ground is sterilized with a deadly ray before the seeds are planted, (keep out of the way when it is working). The contrast with our primitive farming methods and these "super efficient" methods on Iarga is bizarre.

Text.cont: .....and advertising agencies, tax offices, accountants, consultants, ministries, the whole weapons industry, the army, airforce, navy, administration and bookkeeping for as far as it is not connected with the registration of the direct production process, etc, etc... The universal system reaches the unlikely figure of 90%, but this has an additional reason. All creative work is not taken into account because they do not regard this as servile work. It is performed after working hours as a sort of hobby, and includes things such as planning, strategy, innovation, research,

development, scientific research, all art forms and the organization of events. This occupation percentage for the industrialized western countries lies somewhere in the region of 30 to 40%.

"2. The production effectivity is expressed in terms of the relationship to the maximum possible at that moment. What it boils down to is that everything that can be automated is classed as 100%, and the rest is related to that. So exists a model for each system by which other systems can be judged. Think for a moment of the gigantic investment capacity of these trusts in relation to ours, for the most part, small concerns. The Iargan figure is relative, so it does not have much meaning for us; but I think it would be safe to say that our figure would be somewhere in the region of 5o% lower.

"3. The qualityfactor determines the effect of certain goods or investments on the prosperity. An object that lasts twice as long as another has twice the effect on the prosperity. All repair time, direct or indirect, lessens the effect; and beside this is the ethical reason for the quality control, the scarcity of raw materials. An object that lasts twice as long as another uses half the amount of raw materials; that is why they are so critical when it comes to the question of quality, and the trusts allow no concessions in this respect. "Consumer goods that pass the quality test, such as food, score 100%, but all the rest are meticulously checked for durability and repair demands. Durability is expressed in a percentage of the maximum attainable or desirable, and the servicing hours are deducted in percent. When it is said that their rail-system has a useful life of more than one hundred Earth years, and that the frames of their house-cylinders last for many hundreds of Earth years, perhaps you will get an idea of their standards of quality. To set our quality standard again at fifty percent is perhaps ridiculous, but that is not really the point. "The welfare efficiency is calculated by multiplying the three factors by each other, and they state that the universal economic system easily gets 70% average among numerous intelligent races. The average of our industrialized countries can perhaps reach the 7 to 9% figure. This shocking conclusion means that with our present technical development, the welfare profit could be eight to ten times as high as it now is. With a just and efficient system, our present number of workers could have conquered all the poverty in the world. We have a ridiculously inefficient production system caused by too many professions that consume prosperity instead of creating it. Our stupid way of sharing prosperity causes so-called over-production and we resist automation for the sake of employment, while the majority of our world-population lives in poverty.

The low quality of our goods, helped by artificial aging, means that we simply throw away a large part of our welfare profit. Perhaps we can't help it because our mentality is wrong, but no matter how you try to excuse it, it remains stupid." They were dearly pleased that I was at last awake and was able to understand that efficiency and justice were not just loose, idealistic words. But, good heavens, first a hundred times the population density and then times the production. How is that possible? Unbridled overpopulation and unbridled overproduction? Rubbish! We do not know what the words "overpopulation and "overproduction" mean. When we complain about

overpopulation, we mean inefficient economic structure and planning. With overproduction, we mean roughly the same: the low purchasing power of the average income through the inefficiency of our antisocial economy. As soon as we begin to distribute our products in a just manner, we will see that the problem lies in a too low productive capacity.

"Because, friend Stef, make no mistake as to what men will use if given the opportunity. Take, for example, the consumption capacity for a family who, because of their financial state, can have everything they want. Their level lies at least twenty times higher than the world average. Your economy will have to work very hard before you can create genuine overproduction. This shows itself in a failing interest in a larger income when it means a higher working intensity or more responsibility. The remedy is simple: everyone works shorter hours. It works both ways; shorter hours lower the income and stimulate consumption. The wish to work increases in order to increase the income and at the same time the first steps can be taken in narrowing the wage gap by raising the minimum wage. As soon as market saturation manifests itself, the leveling of wages increases. The 'rich' remain as rich as they were before and the 'poor' are raised to the same level and so, with efficiency and justice, you create a stable world!"

"So everyone will then have the same income?"

"Yes, exactly. The prosperity is then fairly shared by everyone. Unlimited prosperity creates complete security."

"You work shorter hours than we do?"

"Yes, much shorter."

"Everyone has the same rights? They all earn the same and there is no difference between a white collar and a pair of overalls?"

"No. Everyone wears overalls from time to time. That is why we hate maintenance and repair work. Are you beginning to understand something about our quality?"

"Yes, and that is another argument for efficiency: you get a different set of tasks for the people. Does your world president also wear overalls sometimes?"

"Of course, since there is no upper or lower class anymore, only a difference between directive and executive work. When we talk about a short work period, we are talking about noncreative production and maintenance work, and everyone does this, even the president. Direction is purely creative work and we do this in our free time."

"Am I to understand that all the top positions are a sort of hobby?"

"We do not differentiate between high and low positions. We choose people to direct us who, outside of their slave labor, also have an interest in this activity as an expression of their creativity, like a hobby. In this stage of development, creativity is no longer considered labor, because it is the target of men."

"That's all well and good, and I can see that if we were to use the same system, things

could be much better for us, but to induce people to change their entire way of life is not easy, not to say impossible. It requires higher education and more knowledge. It's easy for you to teach people by the use of your information radiation. Why don't you give us the knowledge to make such machines? We could then easily guide our people along the right path and it would greatly increase the tempo of Earth's development."

"We tremble at the thought of giving you the secrets of immaterial radiation. It would not be long before man discovered that it could be used as a weapon, with the almost certain result of self-destruction. "And even if it were not so used, who would profit from its advantages? Surely only the developed nations, because the equipment is expensive. This would mean that the white race would be in an even stronger discriminating position against the other races. A race that does not know its responsibilities cannot be helped."

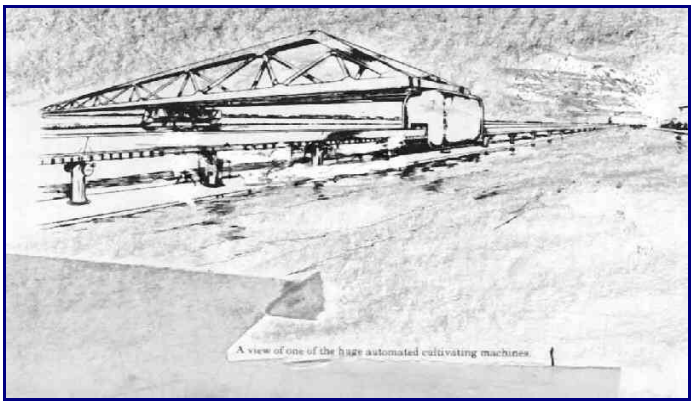
Moving on to the next subject, freedom, they began by showing me one of their living, or house, cylinders. The film opened on the ring road outside the building. An automatic sliding door opened and gave access to the parking space for the cars, in the basement. The cars stood in neat rows, four deep, with the front wheels in shallow grooves in the floor. The camera moved through this area and out through a door which led to the central "garden" of the hollow cylinder. A beautifully laid out recreation area of at least three hundred yards in diameter. A quarter segment of the cylinder was glass which, combined with a gigantic glass roof about three hundred feet above the ground, gave the effect of being inside a huge glass house. Galleries ran around the inside at each floor. And on the lowest gallery, which was wider than the rest, small rail transport units moved. The central space was a huge garden of tropical-looking plants and flowers. A huge central pillar was at its base, surrounded by a rock garden with plants and flowers in the most exotic colors. Streams and waterfalls came out into ponds and tanks that contained strange and brightly colored fish. Green, mosslike areas were broken up by patches off lowers and shrubs. I saw sport fields and playgrounds with rather technical-looking apparatus, ponds in which children were paddling and a large swimming pool into which people dived from a large, slowly turning wheel construction.

Most amazing was the behavior of these Iargans in the water. Even small children could swim with a power and speed that was nothing short of surprising. They floated effortlessly, many swam in pairs with their arms entwined by taking turns in making a sort of scissor movement with their legs. They had immense pleasure, and demonstrated something that could be called a feeling of freedom, freedom from gravity. They sprung and dived under water for so long that it was difficult to see if they ever came up again. The real meaning of this water affinity became clear to me. **These beings did not emerge from the land as we did, but from the water; they developed from amphibians. The broad webs between the widespread fingers and toes was originally a fin which enabled them to spring out of the water like dolphins. They could move in water faster and more easily than on land.** Everywhere were seats, arranged in half or full circles. An magnificent meeting point for young and old, for the

Iargan children did not play in the streets. Everything necessary for living was here, a complete city housed in one huge cylinder, highly efficient and superbly comfortable.

Before I go on to describe their houses, I would like to say something about the general layout of these buildings. In the basement, a huge set of machinery was installed. They used the planet's internal heat as the only power supply and this was distributed as water, under extremely high pressure and temperature. Except for this, these buildings were completely self-supporting. *Even an external sewage and garbage collection did not exist.* They had a fantastic recycling system. Most of the garbage was separated into its raw materials, while human excrements were used as dung for the surrounding agricultural lands, resulting in a nearly one hundred percent circular course. The final debris was burnt and ground to a fine powder. Together with waste water, this was pumped away, deep into the planet's crust. This had something to do with the prevention of heavy earthquakes by means of initiating light ones.

The next floors, underground, they used for offices, workshops and production work at a full day's cycle. They worked at home. This was to prevent unnecessary transport of people to and from their work. Speaking of overpopulation and pollution, there was really something to learn for us! Something else that we could learn from was their method of food production. They only used the word "overpopulation" in relation to the quantity of food that is available; as long as everyone has enough to eat, the planet is not overpopulated. They are very careful to prevent food shortages as this would disrupt their whole society. Investments in the farming areas are much greater than those even in the housing sector. Cultivation, and the associated ground-water control, the spraying, fertilizing and the agricultural machines demand gigantic earth transports and millions of kilometers of pipelines and drainage systems, and again the construction of a canal system and gigantic pump stations. ....cont.under.



Text for drawing: *Huge automated cultivating machines consisted of great bridge structures with a free span of more than a hundred meters. These bridges moved transversely along rails which ran the full length of the fields. They work a piece of land up to 250 meters wide by 10 kilometers long and operate in rows of up to 20 machines side by side. The bridge structures carried a variety of equipment which was controlled from a central control room. Fertilizers and sprays are introduced via the central rail and administered by means of a rolling tank. At the end of the rail the whole unit turns and returns over a parallel strip of ground.*

Cont: All this is a part of their attempt to accommodate the largest possible number of

beings on their planet; the first requisite for this is a maximum food production. They then introduced me to one of their numerous cultivating machines which are mounted in the vast fields situated between the house cylinders. These consisted mainly out of an imposing bridge construction with a free span of more than a hundred meters. These bridges moved transversely along rails which ran the full length of the fields (some ten kilometers) in rows of twenty, placed side by side. The bridges were supported about three meters above the ground and could carry a variety of equipment which was controlled from a central control room. One of the bridges that was working was fitted with a machine that performed many operations in one go. First a strip of ground was cut out in two layers by two U shaped blades; then the strip was sterilized with a deadly (!) ray, sprayed with a muddy looking fertilizer, turned, and returned to the furrow. Then a row of fast moving gooseneck-type pipes planted the seeds for the next harvest, and finally, the surface was rolled flat and covered with a transparent layer.

When the machine was finished the result resembled a dancefloor. They certainly were masters in automation. Beside the farming, their food production was supported to a great extent by the fisheries. Their preference for fish probably has something to do with their amphibian origin, and the fact that they have so many oceans. Their method of catching fish is, in one word, absurd. So absurd in fact, that I thought in the beginning that they were trying to make a fool out of me. Later, I discovered that this was just a by-product of their system of climate control. It was a gigantic water-moving project whereby the warmest water in the oceans is pumped to the islands and seems to have something to do with controlling the rainfall. The system utilizes thousands of kilometers of flexible pipes running under water, each with a.....

text for picture/drawing: The bridge structures performed many operations simultaneously in one run. First, a strip of ground is cut out in two layers by two "U" shaped blades. Then the strip i~ sterilized with a ray, is sprayed with a muddy-looking fertilizer, turned, and returned to the furrow. Then a row of fast moving gooseneck-type tubes plant seeds for the next harvest. Finally the surface is rolled flat and covered with a transparent layer, leaving the field looking flat and finished as a dancefloor. .....

.....diameter of more than one hundred meters. The catch consists purely of fish that have been sieved out of the system. The strange thing was that these fish looked just the same as fish here on earth. I saw some fish with a length of four to five meters which, for as far as my knowledge of biology can be trusted, were perfectly normal sharks. I also saw swordfish; and preditory fish were hunted with the aid of sound waves and flavored bait, the carcasses were thrown back into the sea. Beside this, they also eat meat, but it would be going too much into details to describe their breeding methods here. To tell the truth, *I was somewhat disappointed to see that a super race still killed animals.*

I only relate this information on their food production in order to comply with their request to do so; they see this information as an important part of the process of identification. This process will be dealt with later. For the same reasons, I will also describe some details of their schools and the hospitals in the house cylinders. These were, together with other social services, situated on the top floor, with the glass roof

serving as the ceiling. The school classrooms were square, with four walls from corner to corner, forming four triangles. Where the triangles joined in the middle were four large screens, on which the lesson was shown. The means of teaching was exactly the same as was used for me in the spaceship: a film with a simple explanation; *the real information was transmitted by the radiation.*

In the space behind the four screens sat the "teacher," who really had nothing to do with the lessons but acted more as an observer, noting the behavior of the children and advising parents on their upbringing. *The lessons were the same over the whole planet, this having the advantage that should a child move to another area, which happened frequently, he could simply pick up the lessons where he left off without having to repeat or miss anything. This basic schooling continued until the child had reached the age of fifteen or sixteen years.*

When I think of the information that I gamed in two days from the radiation, I can imagine the level these children must reach when subjected to the radiation for ten years or more. Their basic schooling must be above the level of our universities. Having completed this basic instruction, the children moved on to the advanced schools, a normal cylinder where all the students lived together and where they could specialize in their chosen subjects. The hospital that they showed me was not the type that was situated in each of the cylinders, but areal hospital where special medical treatment was given. Seen from the outside, it looked like a normal house cylinder, but half was the accommodation for the personnel and the other half for the patients. I do not think it is necessary for me to describe the working of such a hospital in detail. The reader can imagine that everything was regulated with the usual Iargan efficiency, and to describe things that can only be clarified by superlatives becomes rather boring. One thing, however, does strike me as interesting. Each patient was "connected" to a computer that catered to the individual needs and wishes of its "charge"; pain alleviation, medicine, contact with friends or relatives, entertainment or information-the computer took care of it!

"Do people still die on your planet?"

"Control of death demands a different medical ethic. We feel justified in prolonging the possibility of happiness, but not in extending a life that nature regards as being at an end."

Going back to the houses, I noted that silent, air-operated elevators with electromagnetic stops functioned as vertical transport, while, broad galleries formed the horizontal connections. From these there was a fantastic view of the central gardens. Each house had a large entrance hall which was open to the gallery, so that anyone who happened to be passing by could look into it. This would not have seemed too strange to me had it not been for the fact that on one side was a row of showers! Here my shocked confrontation with the living habits of these beings and the breathtaking freedom that typified their relations with one another began.

Young and old had the strange social duty, on returning from school, work or any other activity outside the house, of washing themselves from head to toe before re-entering the living quarters. What happened then? Everyone undressed in the hall with the greatest of ease and stepped into the shower. These were tubes, about three feet in diameter, with a glass screen in front, and on the floor were two raised steps on which to stand. At the back of the tube was a vertical bar, to which, at ground level, a flat elliptical tube was connected. Having closed the glass screen, the occupant pressed a button and the elliptical tube immediately began spraying jets of white foam while moving upwards along the vertical bar; the occupant was transformed within a few seconds into a snowman. On reaching the top of the bar, the spray changed to clean water and came slowly back to its original position at the base of the tube. Warm air was then circulated in the tube to dry the bather, washed and dried within three minutes with a minimum use of water. Having dressed, one was then permitted to enter the living quarters. Dressed is perhaps the wrong word, for their house attire was nothing more than a kind of sarong that left the woman, as well as the men, naked above the waist.

You must not think that this bears any comparison with humans dressed in the same manner, the only really noticeable difference between male and female Iargans being that the men are more powerfully built and more muscular than the women. Their behavior toward one another was really remarkable. I never once saw a man in the vicinity of a woman who did not put at least one arm around her. A big hug was their normal manner of greeting one another, and this also applied to the children. When the warm greetings were completed, the camera followed the party into the house. The hall came out in the corner of a large room of about sixty by sixty feet, the central living area of the house. The first thing that I noticed was a huge glass wall over the whole length of the room, which gave a magnificent view of the surroundings. I could see the imposing rail system that passed through a woodland area, and on the other side, two more of the cylinders. The floor of the room sloped down toward the windows in a series of shallow steps and stopped about nine feet from it, where the edge was finished in a king of balustrade. The window continued down to the lower floor, where it ended in a wall about two feet high. The interior was luxurious, but the color combinations were rather too bright for my taste. Loose furniture was nowhere to be seen. The seating was built into the floor in the form of couches, spread with thick, comfortable cushions.

The lower floor was connected to the upper by two steppless "escalators," moving or stationary at the will of the user. The "bedrooms" were not large, but intimate and colorful. In one wall there was a large screen and another contained a shower identical to the ones in the entrance hall. The ceiling glowed with a diffused orange lighting, and strange objects decorated the walls. The next scene was fascinating: the family at table. The group of some twenty-five people, about half of which were children, gathered in a rather bare-looking corner of the large upper floor. One of the company operated a kind of lever and out of the floor rose a vertical "wall" that opened out into a table about eighteen feet long and five feet wide. At the same time, two sliding panels in the wall

opened to reveal a cupboard containing partitions and a lot of complicated equipment. In the manner of a self-service restaurant or cafeteria, each person took a tray and helped himself to various dishes, which were then warmed up for a few seconds in an ovenlike apparatus. Within a few minutes everyone was seated, cross-legged on the floor, around the table. At the head and tail ends of the table sat a man and a woman who did not eat with the rest. As soon as everyone was seated, the man at the head of the table raised his hand and said something, upon which the rest became silent. They held in one hand a gold-colored, spoonlike implement and the other hand was placed on the knee of the person next to them. The people eating remained silent and listened to what the man and woman who were not eating had to say. It was a fascinating scene of the customs of these beings from a strange, distant world.

The way they made a ceremony of eating made them seem rather like mythological gods. When everyone had finished eating, they all stood up and each threw an arm around the shoulders of his neighbor, thus forming a chain around the table. They stood that way for a couple of seconds and then commenced to dear their implements from the table, and when this was finished, the table was again retracted into the floor. The spoons were placed on a machine for cleaning, the plates and trays went into a disposal unit for plastics and everyone finished by washing his hands and cleaning his teeth. Hand towels and dish towels were nonexistent here. Everything was dried by warm air, and I began to wonder what the Iargan housewives had to do, especially as there seemed to be five or six women in each house.Shopping was done automatically by a computer; the order was placed in the computer and the goods were delivered sometime later in a container. "Don't your women have to do housework anymore?"

The Iargans laughed. "We have told you that we no longer have any class distinctions, and this also applies to women. Chores are shared equally by everyone."

"But when men are at work outside the home, the women must surely work too."

"That is true. If men work for three hours a day, women do the same, no more and no less, otherwise there is discrimination." "Strange. So the women may only do housework for three hours per day?"

"Your ideas are slow to change. Housework, in other words, the necessary upkeep, is done by everyone together. If the task of some women is the upbringing and teaching of the children and other social work, then they too have the same right to work outside the home as men do."

"What about the women who don't have any children?"

"All Iargans have the same duty to the children in the group in which they live. The upbringing of the child to the mentally stable and developed adult that a high culture needs is a difficult and complicated task. The schools plant the knowledge by means of the radiation but the adults must help the child to transform this knowledge into experience. The home sphere plays an important part in the development of these things. A race that seeks income leveling must give the utmost attention to raising the mental

level of the people, because the raising of the general minimum wage must be in balance with this level. Value and income differences between people can be overcome only by a high minimum mental level."

"So those women feel happy with the task of teaching children because they are able to fulfill themselves on different levels. They choose what they do."

"Everyone who fulfills his or her task with interest and inventiveness feels happy. What more could one possibly expect from life than being successful in love and able to teach this to children."

"This 'love,' has it got anything to do with sex?"

"The sexual relationship between man and woman plays an indispensible but nevertheless unimportant part in our understanding of the word love. It is directed to be creative individual expression and that is a thing that must begin to be taught to children as young as possible.

"I don't understand that."

"That is logical, for we have only just begun with our explanation of the concept of freedom. Let us start at the beginning. Freedom is the absence of compulsion and because compulsion is a form of discrimination, it follows that freedom is the absence of discrimination. A step further: freedom exists, logically, on the basis of justice and efficiency. The development of an intelligent race is governed by two dangerous natural laws, which in fact are the laws of cosmic selection. They formulate the demands for entrance to the higher regions of evolution, the cosmic integration."

"And is that worth the trouble?"

"Certainly, for it is the choice between everlasting life and everlasting death."

"Oh, I see, a religious aspect. That ceremony at the table had something do to with your religion too?"

"Our understanding of religion is so far evolved that it is incomparable with yours. Have you a religion?"

"I am a Catholic."

"How strange, a Christian! We are familiar with the work of Christ and the Bible. **After you've eaten, you must explain to us how someone with so much property can seriously call himself Christian. We are intrigued.**

On the other hand, it simplifies the explanation of the two cosmic selection laws. The first confirms Christ's condemnation of social discrimination. A high level of technical development liquidates every discrimination and compulsion under pain of chaos and eventual self-destruction. The Earth demonstrates the justice of this law in a convincing manner. The social chaos exists already and the threat begins to manifest itself. At the moment, only the great powers have nuclear weapons at their disposal, but the smaller nationalist groups will soon be in the same position. "The situation becomes more

dangerous every year. Within a short time you will discover the possibility of immaterial radiation and then a handful of people will be capable of producing a weapon that is capable of destroying all mankind. Where does all this lead? How long can a civilization continue to exist where science does not know its responsibilities?

"The second selection law compels the correct understanding of human relationships. It poses 'Christian love' as a condition for cosmic integration. **Only unselfish behavior that restores the original efficiency of natural order can give an intelligent race the certainty of survival until cosmic integration is achieved."**

"That word 'unselfish' sounds so strange."

"The selfish behavior of the masses, where everyone takes everything they can, prevents the ability to work for the common good-to create, for example, a clean planet where the balance of nature can be maintained for an unlimited time. It is also impossible to limit the use of natural resources for the sake of future generations, because a selfish person cannot give up anything for someone else. The greatest problem lies in the law of degeneration: a race that does not succeed in restoring the efficiency of natural selection as it existed in the prehistoric times shall become extinct."

"How do you justify unlimited freedom with reproduction selection that drastically limits the choice of partners?"

"The answer is that it *can only be justified with unselfishness. The partner choice is determined by one's feeling of responsibility."*

"I see, through artificial insemination."

"Where did you get that idea? That doesn't prevent degeneration, it accelerates it! "We are not concerned with producing that biological phenomenon, 'man.' The body with all its selfish demands is just a shell. *We are only concerned with the creative intellect, the soul that is capable of unselfish thought.* How do we educate children for the freedom and happiness? Freedom is the absence of the effect of compulsion on the individual's behavior. **Freedom cannot be obtained with a weapon in the hand.** It can only be obtained by the parents' careful mental forming of their child then, by the correct conception of good and evil. It is a difficult and complicated task that only becomes possible with natural parental love and the variety of other groups.

"There may never by any doubt as to who is the father or mother of a child. The important thing is not having children, but bringing them up. For this reason, artificial insemination is unacceptable. "The unselfishness is the selection requirement for the immortality of the race, but it is also a requirement for a being with a high mental development before he can achieve happiness. *Happiness is being at peace with oneself and one's surroundings*. This is determined to a large extent by one's success in achieving self-set goals, in other words, *by a ruthless appraisal of oneself.* This individual striving to reach a self-chosen goal is the creativity in man.

"Creativity is thought that is continually occupied with changing the circumstances in

one's life or in that of another. It is creativity that drives men to do 'even more' or 'even better.' There are two kinds of creativity, the material and the immaterial. The first is the individual striving to improve his own living standards. This is done mostly in the field of sex, property and power and is the cause of all the misery on this planet. The individuality expresses itself in egocentricity, greed and avarice. In the continual reaching for a material goal, a measure of satisfaction is experienced, *but when the goal is reached, the satisfaction shows itself to be relative and of short duration, merely an object for comparison with what others have. So it continues toward the next goal, usually a higher income or a higher position, and the search continues, because the satisfaction lies only in the searching.*

But then a time comes when the search cannot be continued because of sickness, or old age, and life continues in dissatisfaction with itself. The individual has not understood that material gains can never bring lasting satisfaction and happiness.

"On the other hand, there is the immaterial creativity-your Christian love - and this is lasting happiness. It is the continual striving to improve the living standards of others. It expresses itself in helpfulness, understanding, pity, tolerance, friendliness, esteem-in short, the total concept of unselfish love."

"It sounds to me like a sort of sterile idealism."

"Try to understand that it is not. Do you believe that social stability creates unlimited prosperity and complete security?"

"Yes, I can accept that."

"Can you also accept that a man without creativity can never be happy?"

"Yes, I understand that."

"What goal can human creativity have when material motives vanish? What can a materialist do in our world, other than be bored to tears? *What does a man really possess who possesses everything except love? The answer is: nothing!*

"Everything that previous generations have done to create a stable world with a high level of scientific and technical development and unlimited prosperity is worthless when man lacks the love that can give him happiness.

"Every unselfish deed, every self-sacrifice, heightens the feeling of personal value, of satisfaction. A man who has reached a high degree of unselfishness manifests a lasting personal value as a noticeable side of his personality - wisdom - which appears to be unaffected by setbacks or aging. He becomes invulnerable in his feeling of personal value, his peace with himself, his happiness. There is no alternative, Stef. Natural selection laws are inexorable. Only a race with a high level of unselfishness, or, as we call it, an immaterial structure, can survive."

"Does all this also apply to us? I can’t imagine this world being inhabited by people who love each other."

"The more we talk, the more we become convinced that you are not a Christian. The whole point of Christ's teaching - love - is completely strange to you. You have apparently never heard of the striving for unselfishness in the Buddhist religion. There is no choice. O*nly when man is free of material influences can he succeed in bringing up children who, through their unselfish mental attitude, can be really free and happy.* You must teach them to love and concern themselves with others. They must learn to be very expressive with their feelings. This makes great demands on their eloquence, to be able to put their feelings into words. This is characterized by their honesty, spontaneity and enthusiasm, their helpfulness and, above all, their ability to raise their love contacts above the physical to great spiritual heights. We seek adventure in the quantity and depth of our human contacts. You have seen this all on the screen in front of you. Iarga is a planet where the people love each other, where people are happy to meet each other and where they find it a pity that they can only take one person at a time in their arms.

"As soon as our children have reached the age of sexual maturity, the parents arrange for the child to undergo a psychological and medical test. If they pass this, they are then declared legally free and obtain the rights of voting and sexual freedom. We celebrate this with a great feast. The parents rejoice with the children in the fact that they have been judged as being worthy of true freedom."

"Good lord, Then the parents permit them to go to bed with anyone and everyone?"

"Your surprise is understandable, because you do not know the character structure of our race. *Our urge to reproduce is much less than yours, partly because we do not experience the same pleasure in sex. We do not use it as a way of passing the time, but as an expression of intimacy and love. The evolution cycle of Iarga is different and we have a precisely controlled population growth. Earth should strive for a population explosion so that the race is complete before it has a chance to destroy itself. Sex plays a completely different role by us, there is no comparison.*

"We should add that the position of our women is also vastly different to yours. They have a different creation mandate which causes a fundamental difference. Earth women have a heavy task(oppgave) in the future, which is why they now have the command of obedience to the man. This will give her the right in the future to take over the task of leadership without damaging the principle of equality.

"Iargan men and women are equals, but have different mandates. Women have the dominant position because they must lead the mental development, they are not sex objects. The subject of sex, which here on Earth is regarded as forbidden fruit and therefore takes on an unhealthy appeal, has no adverse effect on us at all. *A man-woman relationship that is based solely on sex we consider degrading.* Our women would rather die on the spot than be used for a kind of physical training; they make high demands of their partners. They demand their interest, their tenderness and mostly their respect for her as a person, for her intellectual level. Everything is directed at creative expression and the sex act plays a very minor part in it.

"In many relationships, sex is totally absent, without that absence having any effect on the satisfaction experienced. Once you have really learned to live, it is difficult to understand what Earth being can have as their reason for living."

"We often wonder about this ourselves, but I think I am beginning to understand what that reason should be."

The lesson continued, but I am afraid that it did not penetrate to any great extent. I was too busy with my own thoughts. They were explaining their marriage concepts and personal relationships, based on the separation of sex and propagation, but my mind was filled with questions and doubts. All this was very interesting, but what had it to do with me? It was dear that they had a better life than we have, but, then, they were not human, they did not live in our world, and if they did, they would surely be the same as we are. If, but, why, how; my mind was running around in circles. At the moment that they tried to make clear to me that sexual freedom was not permitted to the Earth because we failed in love, I gave up.

"What is the point of this confrontation with your way of life? Your way of life is not possible for us, even if we wanted to live as you do. The Earth can never become like Iarga. Your society strikes me as being a curiosity that has no practical use for us whatsoever."

"You are right. The Earth will never become like Iarga. The Earth is, in contrast to Iarga, a thin-atmosphere planet of a different character, and this applies also to her inhabitants. W*e have a different evolution cycle than you, but the goal in the evolution of all the intelligent races in this universe is one and the same.* **The ways are different; the goal is the same.** The practical purpose of this confrontation is the planting of insight, not insight into our technique or our social structure, although this could be of use to you, but into our mentality.

CHAPTER 4

Iargan Society

I should try to sum up a number of my conclusions. Iargans and humans would seem to be totally different beings, but in fact the only real difference is a body that is adapted to life on their respective planet. Other differences are caused by different upbringing and environmental effects, but intellectually and emotionally we are about the same. If a Iargan were to be born on Earth, he would become a normal human being; and if a human were to be born on Iarga, he would become a normal Iargan. So, if this is true, how do we account for the vast difference in mentality? The oversocialized community that eliminates all discrimination and aggression would demand a tremendous improvement in human mentality, otherwise it would be misused by the greedy and the lazy. It demands a race with a high degree of unselfishness."

"Am I to understand from this, that Iarga's secret lies in a perfect method of bringing-up children? "

"No; due to her planetary conditions, Iarga has a different cycle of evolution than the Earth. Due to this, we have the ability to continually improve our mentality through many generations. Iarga's secret is that we are bound by the law of cause and effect and are therefore subject to reincarnation-selection. This law lost its validity on Earth long ago. On Earth, the weeds grow up with the corn until the harvest, and then the selection takes place. Because of this, mankind cannot improve her mentality. You are still troubled by the demonic element of human dualism and there is no escape. "On Iarga, on the other hand, the weeds are constantly removed, which neutralizes the demonic element. Naturally, the childrens upbringing plays a large part in the mental attitude, but it is not the cause of the improvement. "Your supposition that a human born on Iarga would grow into a normal Iargan is incorrect. In the first place, he would not have taken part in the reincarnation cycle of Iarga and what is more, his character would not fit. "Due to the planet conditions, a human is willful and disobedient. He obeys no God, no commandment, and no conscience; he even pretends that he doesn't have one. He knows everything better. I *hope that we never have to accept one of these beings into our system, it would be a terrible mistake, without counting the damage it would do to his surroundings.* **A large dose of unselfishness can only exist in an environment that is protected from evil.** You see that it is not as simple as you think."

"Great Gods, what have I got myself into? More or less by accident I seem to ask a relevant question, and during the answer I hear expressions that are meaningless to me. What am I supposed to make of expressions such as reincarnation-selection, evolution cycle, and demonic dualism?"

"To answer this we will have to explain the whole plan of creation, is this what you want?"

"Certainly!"

"Excellent, but we will have to change the nature of our explanation. Before long, something exceptional is going to happen, the Earth's isolation will be broken. The exchange of information between intelligent races will take place, and this is bound by stringent rules and conditions. "The first rule is that such exchange must be preceded by an identification procedure in which credentials are exchanged. Next to the physical confrontation, this demands an illustrated description of the planet and the type, evolution, and history of the race. Normally this takes place during exchange visits, which implies the capability of space flight, but in your case a different procedure will have to be followed, you will visit Iarga only in the mind by means of a special system that we have established. The pictures that you have stored in your memory are real, and not from a film. "We possess the power of mind over matter, as you also will within a short time.

"Before we can begin with the explanation of the plan of creation we must complete the identification. You must know who we are, where we come from, and what our intentions are. We already know these details of mankind, because we have access to the source of human knowledge, or if you prefer it, the spirit of man, where all human thoughts and experiences are determined. We know your thoughts too."

"Now I realize that you started this identification process already from the beginning. I can't think of any other explanation for this detailed description of yours. Did you know how this conversation was going to turn out before we began?"

"Yes, time and matter are creations out of the void and are therefore composed of pure contradictions that leave the original infinity intact. Therefore, they do not really exist. *The timeless consciousness that sent us here knew who we would find here,* and what he would do with the information. Every detail of every human life is known in advance."

"Then this meeting was no accident?"

"Most certainly. *The goal of creation would be impossible if coincidence did not exist.* A coincidence just happens, and is therefore free. The fact that a timeless consciousness in a nonmaterial existence knows the outcome of the coincidences in advance, changes nothing in the freedom of the coincidence. For us you are, and will remain, a coincidence; *even when we know roughly what will take place.* Your freedom remains undamaged; should you decide to leave now, nobody would attempt to stop you. **If you decide not to use the information you will receive, you are perfectly free, nobody Will compel you."**

"I reserve my comments. May we continue?"

"Since we have now received your freely given consent, we can intensify the further transfer of information. You will be induced to sleep, and when you awake, you will recollect a very lengthy lecture in which you have gathered a wealth of information."

The strangest thing about this is that I remember nothing of falling asleep or waking up.

If they had not told me about it, I would have noticed nothing except that something had gone wrong with the time. All the information that I can remember so clearly, *would normally have taken weeks to gather;* I realized later that the exercise must have been completed in about one and a half hours. It is a casual demonstration of their power to manipulate the human mind, their power of "mind over matter" that will be explained in the second part of this book. It confirms my first feelings during the confrontation, the fear you feel when you know you are helpless; even these steel walls cannot protect me from this intelligent pressure group. Some kind of primitive instinct warned me. I wonder if my participation in this meeting was as voluntary as they would have me believe. The mental pressure that was put upon me, especially in the second part of the conversation, certainly gave me my doubts. Now, after many years, the doubts have gone.

The question of my freedom during the confrontation is no longer of importance, the question now is, if I am free in the use of the information, and the answer to this is yes. No person or situation has exerted any kind of pressure to influence my decision in whether or not to publish the information. Having completed this note, I will continue with the real purpose of this book, and relate the information that has been burned into my memory. During this, I will ignore the dialog form, and concentrate more on the efficiency of reporting. The subject is the further development of the Iargan race and in particular the birth of the superculture. Their definition of the word **civilization** or culture has nothing to do with the scientific or technological development level, **but with the manner in which the community takes care of the handicapped or weaker beings**.(This is exactly as the danish, clairseeing editor Martinus(1890-1981) says: A sivilisations stage of evolution, can be measured in how the society takes care of the weak and sickly ones in the society. R.Ø. comment)

The word superculture defines the situation that arises when through individual effort, a groups structure has arisen which abolishes any discrimination against any individual. It is of the greatest importance not to forget that this situation was only possible *due to the fact that the reincarnation selection exists on Iarga* which roots out the adepts of evil. This is therefore an environment which is protected from the influence of evil. This development is also of importance to us, because we will also develop a superculture one day. This Earth-adapted version will develop during the approaching kingdom of peace and justice after the "resurrection" selection.

The things described here in connection with the identification procedure are only the developments themselves, the background causes can only be dealt with in part two. The description of this development fits in perfectly with the previous explanations. The universal economic system shows itself in practice to be an efficient production system of goods and services, placing prior importance in the sectors housing, nutrition and transport. The produce is then shared by simply controlling the individual use or consumption. The aim of this system is to free the individual as much as possible from non-creative, servile work. As soon as the production reaches a point of overproduction,

the work day is shortened which allows more time for creative pursuits. The importance that they place in creativeness deserves some explanation. They see the purpose of their existence as threefold.

1. The creation of their individual identity. This occurs more or less automatically by being born, by living, and by working.

2. The creation of their immortality by the use of their talents. They stimulate each others activities by attempting to reach self-chosen creative goals. They think that they live on in their works, in their creativity.

3. The choice of their second identity, being the culmination of their daily choice between selfish and unselfish creativity. This determines whether the individual will take part in the formation of a godly or ungodly consciousness. This conviction is the cause of their unbridled pursuit of creativity in the broadest meaning of the word. The first assignment is fulfilled automatically so that the second becomes the most important. *The search for unselfishness comes later.*

This resulted in a dominant interest in freeing themselves for individual creativity. With this idea in mind, they created a highly efficient, almost completely automated production system. Next, they sought to reduce the consumption of goods and services by appealing to the self-discipline, in order to attain a reduction in production or an increase in population. Eventually **they reached the situation in which everyone, without exception, had only to work for one day in the week on the direct production process**. The voluntary constraint of consumption and the equality of the non-creative work output, lead automatically to the equalization of incomes. People waive (frafaller) their right to consume and their needs decrease.

Then comes the great moment in the development of the Iargan race, the control on consumption is lifted. *All goods and services are freely available to all above a certain age.* The individual self-discipline has come of age, material greed has been conquered. The Iargans look upon this as the beginning of the superculture. **Free access to all this prosperity, for everyone, makes it impossible for an individual to be wanting when compared to others**. This is the welfare state without discrimination, that takes care of you from the cradle to the grave, that we, lacking the selection, can never create on Earth.(never?? - Martinus means it will take long time - at least 500 years to reach this level here on Earth. RØ:comm)

What a shame, human beings cradled in the warmth of unselfishness would be wondrous. Happiness and satisfaction means reaching the goal of your creativeness together with others, as long as this strengthens the feeling of self-respect. This can only work as long as there are none of the types that always want all of the glory for themselves, and this makes great demands on the leaders of any creative project. This is obviously only a part of their battle to eliminate the spiritual or immaterial backlog. It is impossible to describe this comprehensive system of caring for each other, simply because it is so far removed from what we regard as possible. I think that it may be impossible for many people to imagine such a situation, and I can perhaps better confine

myself to a description of some of the end results. A superculture can be recognized by its unbridled creative power. It is unbelievable what a dedicated group can attain in a short time when no time has to be wasted on control or supervision. It is the hey-day of science, technology, and art.

Laboratories and observatories are built and they discover the secrets of the universe. Their creativeness builds gigantic spacecraft which operate on reaction free power, they build submarines for the exploration of their oceans, their knowledge knows no bounds. They develop a strong affinity for beauty, which manifests itself in numerous artifacts. The central gardens in the house cylinders change into complete art exhibitions that attract a constant flow of visitors. Their designs especially, show their affinity with the creator and the universe. Half abstract art forms illustrate the details of creations beauty. A kind of religious art form. They are continually occupied, and demonstrate an activity that astounds the earthly observer. This can also be said of the speed with which the one discovery follows the other; this appears to have no connection with the fact that they are highly intelligent, but b*ecause they have the ability to tune in to cosmic vibrations, the ancient knowledge of the creator.*

They call this the ability of final contemplation, a state of mind that they can reach as a group. It is impossible for us to reach this stadium for some time, the Iargan evolution cycle is a closed circuit in which external interference is excluded. They are self-supporting because they obey a Godly law, they are aware of their dependence on an almighty creation plan,(the Word).

They obtain the knowledge that we can only learn from others, this is why the races with an open cycle are helped by the races with a closed cycle of evolution. This short description should make it clear that the following description of the final contemplation is purely a part of the identification process, very essential, but for us purely a curiosity, at least for the moment. *It is one of the sweet fruits of a very high level of unselfishness.*

I was witness to a bizarre "happening" in the garden of one of the house-cylinders. Some hundred Iargans sat or lay in a mosscovered hollow about 30m across. This amphitheater arrangement afforded them all a view of a kind of abstract statue placed in the middle of the hollow. It was a hub with a series of shafts, on which were mounted about ten spoked, wheel-like objects. A man and a woman were, as artists, engaged in attaching colored globes to the ends of the spokes; beside them, a man addressed the gathering. Wide-eyed, I observed this colorful gathering that was engaged in a remarkable kind of "touching"(rørende) ceremony. Left, right, and center, all were lying or sitting in, as far as we are concerned, intimate poses; looking and listening. This took place in the early stages of their super culture.

They used a "simple" method of teaching their riper youth to develop their powers of final contemplation, and these had been prepared for this evening by a day of special activities and mental training. The orator in the middle of the group concentrated their thoughts on the object by means of questions, the purpose being that everyone present

would feel the answer at the moment of the ecstatic climax. *The contemplation training is aimed at the development of a strong collective thought power*, a matter controlling power, through mutual concentration on a visual object. *In this case a kind of electronic fire that had to be synchronized by their power of thought.* The orator had ended his questions, and now made a gesture in the direction of a number of musicians seated at some long, low instruments. These placed their fingers on the ten keys of the instrument and began to press them in and out in a certain rhythm, and at the same time, move them from left to right and back again. Each set of five keys could move independently, a sort of movable piano keyboard. The gathering reacted immediately, they sat straight up with their legs crossed and their hands on the shoulders or knees of the person next to them. Seven women dressed in transparent blue veils stood up from the front row and formed a ring around the central object. The artists that had decorated the object seated themselves at another piece of equipment that also had keys, fitted in discs that could tilt as well as turn.

Then the lights went out and they were seated in darkness. I had slowly but surely become used to seeing strange situations, but this was the climax of the Iargan series. The object began to move. It turned in its vertical axis, and the individual spoke systems each turned on its own axis, while tilting at the same time. The globes at the end of the spokes began to throw off sparks as if they were glowing hot. Then the sparks began to form a haze and sprung over between the wheels until the whole two meter high object was transformed into a turbulent ball of fire. The intensity of the light increased, and the original bluewhite color changed into a fantastic color composition of boiling waves of individual spots of orange, red, yellow, green, blue, and white.

At points where spots of the same color touched each other, blinding flashes appeared; the final result is best described as a blinding, boiling fireball, that illuminated the surroundings with intense flashes of multicolored light. The seven veiled women danced with jerky movements to the rhythm of the music, such a graceful, refined, perfectly coordinated dance, that I can only call it staggering. Their transparent veils and their glass-like skin seemed to absorb the light flashes to such an extent that it seemed as if they themselves were emitting a constantly changing glow of light. The haughty concentration with which they performed their dance made them seem like supernatural beings, elevated far above the material. The gathering watched the fire dance in deep concentration, moving slightly to the beat of the music. The turbulence and flashing of the globes began to take on a more regular pattern; suddenly, the lights formed into colored bands and the flashing ceased. At that moment a shock ran through the gathering, they seemed to increase their concentration on the fireball. The music stopped and the dancers stood like statues. Deadly silence. Suddenly, the flashes of light began again, but this time in the colored bands, and in a controlled pattern of movement. This was the supreme moment at which their powers of contemplation manifested themselves invisibly.

Their collective thoughtpower was used to compel(tvinge) the two operators of the

electronic fire to perform the fast and faultless actions that were needed to synchronize the colors, something that is impossible to do alone. As soon as the synchronization was accomplished, the two operators removed their hands from the controls and the necessary control was performed purely by the thought-power of the group.This continued for several minutes. The impression that all this made on me was almost destructive. I was in such a state of confusion that I nearly lost control of myself and was at the point of fainting. Only later did I realize why I reacted in this way. I was a real witness to the happening. It wasn't the sight of all this that so disturbed me, but the direct experience of their will power. Their thoughts had to control the confusing electronic fire, and they had to transmit exceptionally strong impulses which only served to confuse me!

It is good that we do not yet possess these powers, they would only make things more difficult for us. On the other hand, it made it clearer to me how they can heal people by the power of thought, it is a power that moves every sinue in your body. The principle of the final contemplation is more difficult to understand. **They state that the creative power of man is not personal, but something that he has borrowed for a time. It is a reflection of the ever present creativity field that I call the omnicreativity. Totally, it was the power of the creator, and as such, almighty**. Now it is available as an impersonal consciousness component t*hat waits for the intelligent races to use it.*

By using it, it becomes a personal consciousness component by which personalities are created that have the power of mind over matter. *One who has reached this level, is capable of omni-creative contacts without the aid of a group, and then has the ability of final contemplation*. They describe the contemplative climax as the feeling as if the skull opens and the thoughts take wing into an unbounded space. It can also be described as the mind entering the presence of the blinding light of truth and cherishing warmth. (et slags kollektivt kosmisk glimt. Rø -komm) The physical sensation is described as a moment of shuddering ecstatic happiness. No words can fully describe the sensation of coming face to face with the source of all knowledge and wisdom, the being will then approach a condition of all-knowledge and allwisdom through multiple repetitions of contemplative contacts.

This is in fact the beginning of the cosmic integration process, taking part in a new godly consciousness. To attain this, the person must have freely and irrevocably chosen for it, and freed himself from his demonic consciousness component. In other words, he must have passed the selection; we have not yet done this, and it is therefore beyond our reach. The reason for this premature explanation (it really belongs in the second part of this book) is to give the reader some idea of how the Iargans obtained the knowledge of the creation plan in which they instruct others. It can also serve to aid the understanding of the Iargan cycle of evolution as a part of the identification process. How the final contemplation binds a race of billions of beings, who differ little from us, into a homogeneous group that knows only one goal; the perfection of their society by mutual love so that the whole race, including the slower ones, is capable of taking part in the omni-creative integration process.

This longing for absolute values creates a mutual bond, so dominant, that a situation of collective consciousness replaces the individual. In this last phase of the super-culture, the Iargan race reaches such a high grade of love, knowledge, and wisdom; such a level of perfection that it is impossible for us to imagine. Even less imaginable is that we too will one day reach the same level. For the rest of the identification procedure, I refer you to the second part, because it is impossible to separate it from the explanation of the plan of creation. The real reason for their visit was, as has been said, the planting of information, *describing the future of the Earth* and the reason for the external interference that will disturb the authority and sovereignty of the human race. This information has been placed in the second part of this book and, in this, has misplaced the sequence of the original conversation. The next two chapters clearly belong in the introduction and contribute to the identification, they therefore belong in the first part, according to my feelings. I have chosen to use the dialog form again because this conforms with the reality. It is in fact the farewell ceremony which took place when I awoke from my "trance".

CHAPTER 5

Iargan Spacecraft

"We will now keep the promise we made at the beginning of this meeting and show you our spacecraft."

The screen showed a new picture in space with thousands of stars in the endless black depths of the cosmos. In the middle hung four shining round discs, spaced at regular intervals and exactly in line. A moment later these objects turned slowly and I was able to see a side view. I felt a wild triumph welling up inside me.

"Flying saucers-real, live flying saucers!" In the side view they had the streamlined profile of a perfect discus with knife-sharp edges. They were marked from above and below with many concentric rings, but windows or any other sign that living beings were on board were nowhere to be seen. Only on the outer right ship was a small projecting cylindrical ridge to be seen, which blindingly reflected the sunlight. They were connected to each other by a cable and apart from this, I could see no other details. "How large are those things?"

"You can judge that for yourself. The navigation dome is raised in the last craft and you have walked over it."

"You don't mean that small shining ridge?"

"Certainly."

I was shocked. You would build a villa on that platform! "But. . .now, let me see. They must be nearly one thousand feet in diameter!"

"our compliments on your power of estimation."

I was breathless. A supertanker could turn on one of them! "Such a monster is surely not here underwater?"

"No, this is a landing unit, a complete spacecraft of much smaller dimensions that can detach itself from the mother ship, operate independently in space and land on planets."

"Why are they so large?"

"They are not so large. We would like to build them bigger, but for safety reasons, each space command consist of five ships. You cannot see the last one here because the film was made by this ship during a coupling maneuver close to Iarga. The ships are connected to each other by a hollow tube containing a lift. We are therefore able to visit each other."

"Why do they have the discus form?"

"The discus is the final universal form of starships. The main reason is the round form of the propulsion unit, **the sun wheels.** To give you an idea of this, here is a film."

A gigantic, round, factory hall appeared, at least twelve hundred feet in diameter and with a self-supporting roof construction. One of these craft was under construction. A complicated, star-patterned rib construction in which the contours of an enormous discus could dearly be seen. Hundreds of Iargans in orange-colored overalls were working in innumerable floor levels between cranes and other equipment. Close to the outer edge of the discus were two round pipes, each of about twenty feet in diameter and about twelve feet apart, one above the other. Outside this doubletube system was a much larger tube with a triangular cross section, rounded off at the corners. This was connected to the other two tubes by tangential, trumpet-shaped pipes. *This ring system was the sun wheel.*

"When I don't understand how a set of tubes can power a spaceship, you can hardly expect me to understand why they must be round."

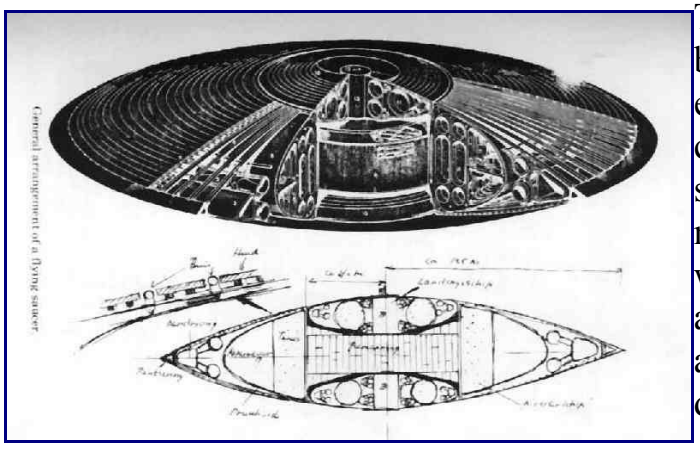
"The mass-kinetic propulsion principle is understandable to you. In both the round tubes, matter is spun round at relative speed. The direction in each tube is opposite, one left and one right."

"Oh, I see-a sort of cyclotron?"

"Let us say a sort of synchrotron. The outlet principle of a rocket is known to you. Hot gases, or material, is forced out at the highest possible speed. A universal spaceship does in fact do the same thing. Matter is forced out at the speed of light, but not into space; *it comes into an antimass field,* where it simply disappears and falls back as immaterial energy in the cosmic carrier field. Look at this ring system from above and strike a line square at the flight direction through the center point. You then have two diametrically opposite points. At these points and where the material stream is in a backward direction, you set a cosmic laser working, which continually lets the fastest moving particles escape. You then have the same effect as a rocket which blasts material out at the speed of light through two nozzles. Through the circle form, the two lasers can be moved, so that the propulsive power can be used in any direction from the horizontal plane."

"I understand it so far, but you must need an awful lot of fuel in order to continually allow material to excape."

"That is the secret of the universal spaceship. No matter is lost in the propulsion process.

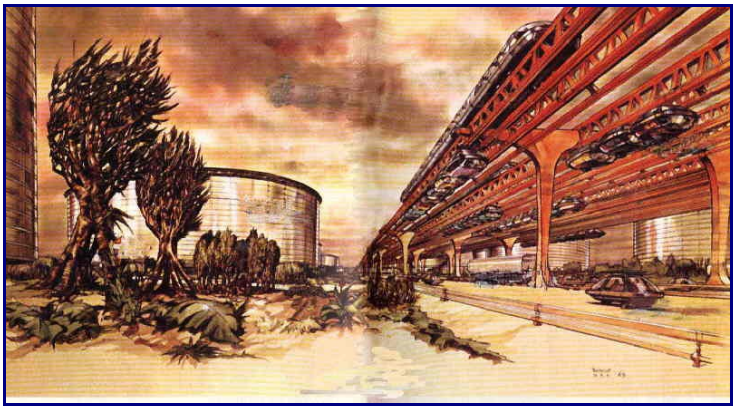


The matter blasted backwards vanishes but stays as an overdose of immaterial energy of the cosmic carrier field in a complicated power field within the spaceship. Because of this, we can create new matter within a fraction of a second, which is again introduced and accelerated. The process repeats itself as an endless cycle. Through the disappearance of ..... (cont.under)

text for craftdrawing: *Sectioned view of a "space discus". The discus form of the mother ship, which is approximately 250 m in diameter, is a compromise between a maximum surface area for cooling and a minimum frontal area with a maximum capacity. This is the universal solution for space travel at cosmic velocities. The power source, a "sun-wheel" (two opposed cyclotrons with an outer ring for the control of weightless energy) is unknown to US and demands the circular planform. The danger of collision with cosmic dust at relative speeds necessitates the smallest possible frontal area. The two smaller modular discs are in fact landing units, the mother-ship always remains in space. Electro-magnetic fields, high temperatures, and the ionization of the surrounding air, make it impossible for Us to see these craft in clear detail. A race that can finance such machines is by axiom peaceful, they need global Cooperation before it is possible.*

Key to the numbers on drawing:.

1. Armor plating
2. Main power unit
3. Tangential connectors between cyclotrons and collector ring
4. Main frames
5. Outer skin and cooling system
6. Pressure skin
7. Equipment area
8. Fuel tanks (water)
9. Crew area, food cultures, etc.
10. Landing unit (tanker) for wet planets
11. Water tanks in landing unit
12. Crew area in landing unit
13. Command tower (retractable)
14. Direction of constant acceleration (or deceleration)



(text for painting-image of Iargan city, page 102-103 in the book) *The dwelling units, great covered rings, over 900 feet in diameter by nearly 300 feet high, housed about 10,000 people per unit, and included all services and facilities of all kinds for that many individuals. They were arranged in rectangular formations of 36 ring-complexes per "city" giving a population density of about 6,000 per square kilometer. The strange vegetation has evolved to withstand the heavy gravity and the high winds that prevail here. With only a 10% land surface available on this planet high density living became a necessity and developed efficiently. The strange vegetation has evolved to withstand the heavy gravity and the high winds that prevail here. The fully automated robot rail transport system operated with frictionless efficiency, moving vehicles of many sizes and configurations at high speeds.*

There were individual cars for small groups, collective units like trains for mass movement, cargo units for commerce, and even a peculiar development something like a hotel tram. A group of people wanting to travel together would order a unit that was fitted out as a self-service hotel and simply go where the mood took them. The system was marvelously efficient and could move over one million persons per hour past any point using only the upper six-lane rail system between the house blocks. The rail system and equipment was designed with a useful life expectancy of 1,000 years, a kind of quality undreamed of on Earth.

(cont. From above).....the matter, the movement energy is lost, which is to say that it is changed into a reaction-free force, but the mass energy is retained."

"You've lost me. You can really create reaction-free forces in a closed circuit! How is that possible? I always thought that the law of action-reaction was correct."

"That law is indeed correct. And in order to overcome the law you must overcome natural laws, or, in other words, the cosmic carrier-field laws."

"Are you not afraid that with this information we could construct a sun wheel?"

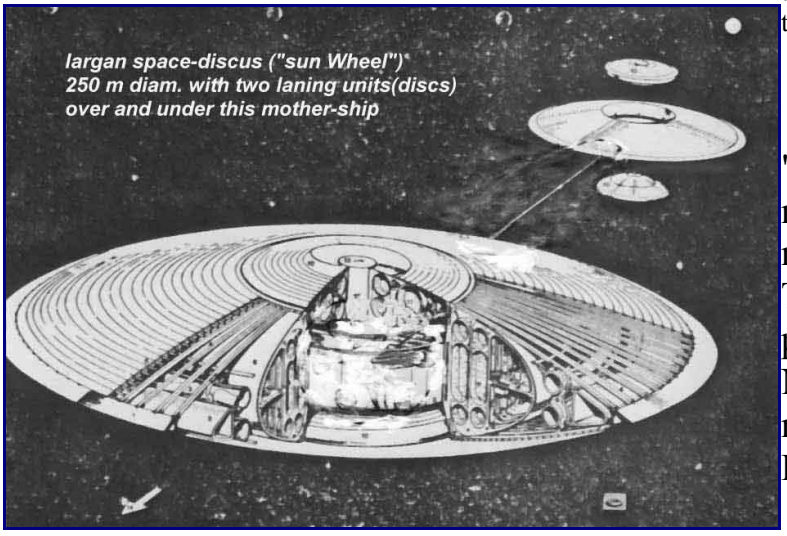
"No. The cardinal point, the reversal of the matter-energy carrier-field transformations, defying the laws of nature, demands such a high standard of advanced atomic science *that you will no longer be able to reach it.* Energy surplus(overskudd) from the carrier field, which can create matter particles, is an extremely dangerous phenomenon. Such unimaginable concentration of energy can only be controlled in gravitational fields of which even the most elementary knowledge is absent here on Earth. Such a sun wheel radiates a force that *even over long distances can cause certain electron movements to cease and metal constructions to disintegrate.* You have no idea of the technique that goes into building universal spacecraft."

"Why do you call it a sun wheel? What has it got to do with the sun?"

"Suns, due to the rotation of their critical mass, are natural spacecraft which, under the influence of the particle bombardment of their neighbors, navigate space with free cosmic vector powers. Through these powers they maintain their distance from other stars and cause the turning moment and the expansion of galaxies. *The sun wheel, therefore, is a copy of the power of a sun.* A sun wheel can exert power only in the horizontal plane and one alone can, therefore, not navigate. It is necessary to place a smaller wheel beside the main central wheel, on both sides, that of the landing units, so that a torque can be created in order to steer the ship. When this ring system is covered by metal plating, the discus form appears naturally."

"Why do they have to be so streamlined, since space is surely empty?"

"We wish that were true! For spaceships that travel at relative speeds, space is not empty enough and not only streamlining but armor plating is also necessary. You have seen our ship and can see that armor is not a useless luxury. They have no windows; they are heavy, armored projectiles, whose strength comes from the discus form. (comment: other cosmic races for ex. Pleiadians from planet Erra (Semjase..) - seems to have developed a system with magnetic protection shields, which apperently serve the same purpose as here described. But it seems as **these** beeings - Iargans -dont travel interdim./through jumps in hyperspace, as the Erra-siv. describes. And because of that - their spacetravels seems to take very long time as will be said later in the text. In earlier times the pleiadians/our ancestors from the system of Lyra, also had these "first generation space travels", then the trips took very,very long time. - R:ø.remark)



"When our radar warns us of dust or material, we make the banking maneuver that you have just seen. This then presents the smallest possible surface area to the danger. Nevertheless, each particle of dust makes burn marks on the plating. For this reason we always fly in line

formation. The command consists of five ships and the lead ship is always unmanned, because this one runs the greatest risk. The ships are connected by a cable, because at relative speeds radio contact is impossible. "Another advantage of the discus form is the great natural resistance to thermal variations and the large cooling surface. The ships are very hot under normal working conditions and the outer plating acts as a cooler for control of the energy processes on board. Lastly, the discus form is ideal for creating a strong magnetic field that protects the occupants from dangerous radiation in space. We hope your question is answered."

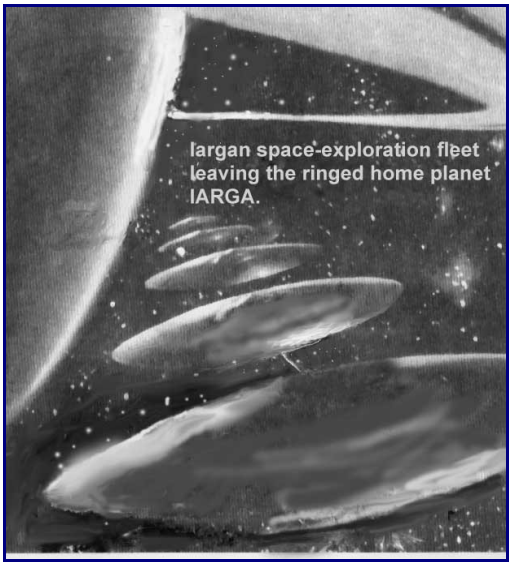
"Yes, fine, thank you- ,,but didn't you say something about a protective weapon which you could use if material threatened to cross the path of the spacecraft?"

"The antimatter ray, Stef, is a defense against larger blocks which only rarely occur in space. The use of this ray demands not only enormous quantities of energy, but it is controlled by strong restrictions to prevent disturbing the natural balance. We are only justified in its use when no other methods are possible. This weapon cannot replace the armor plating of our ships."

"I understand. What is life like on board in weightless conditions? It seems to me that it must not be very pleasant."

"In weightless conditions it would indeed not only not be pleasant, it would even be impossible. An intelligent being cannot live without gravity during the endless journey between the stars. We have solved this problem by the continual use of the sun wheel, which creates a constant acceleration or deceleration exactly like the conditions on our planet. We do not subject our people to abnormal gravity forces. The acceleration of our ships is always constant so that we can live on board exactly as in our homes. "The journey begins with a long period of acceleration until we have reached the maximum speed at which navigation is possible. Then we alternately slow down and speed up. The last part of the journey is a long period of deceleration. Gravity is always normal, because of the continual working of the great, central sun wheel. The small sun wheels are not used for normal propulsion." (Again: other cosmis races for ex. Pleiadians from planet Erra (Semjase..) - have developed a system which creates a artifical gravitition field, where all atoms (in people aboard) are affected of the same progressive forces as of the ship. R.ø.)

"What is 'above' and 'below' with you on board?"..... (cont. below)



(text for UFO-painting): *Painting of an Iargan exploration leaving the ringed home planet on an interstellar journey. An exploration command frequently consists of five thousand-foot-diameter universal spacecraft powered by "sun wheels." They fly in line-astern formation connected by an umbilical. One of the two twohundred-fifty-foot detachable landing modules may be seen in the center of each of the larger excursion vessels. Painting by Jim Nichols. (cont.from above)*

.....The screen again showed the view of the four ships in line formation joined by the cable. "You see here the formation of our command shortly after leaving our planet. The acceleration was in the direction off light and the ships flew to the left. The left ship is therefore above the right one, where the navigation dome is out, is below."

"So you are standing upright in the area that is horizontal in the picture. I see you then on your side."

"Exactly."

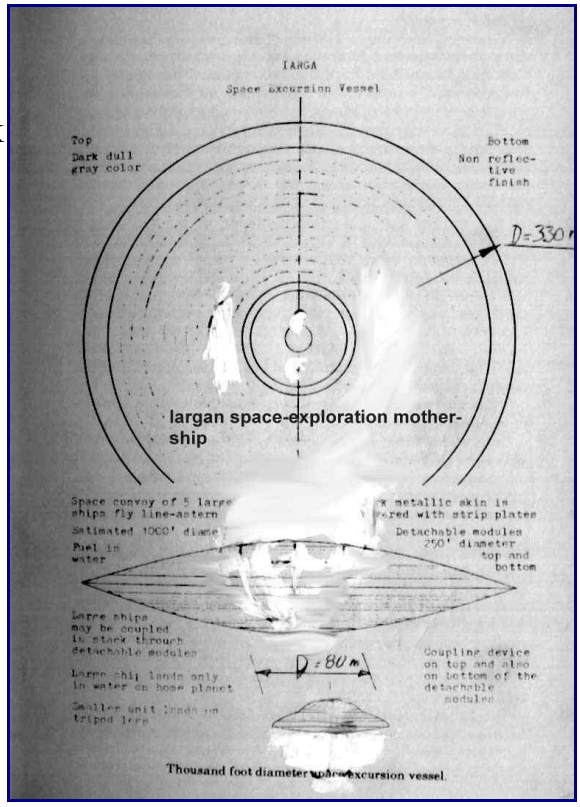
I stared into the navigation dome and suddenly I understood: "I see- This navigation dome is normally vertical, which explains why all the instruments are on the floor. The metal grills are the floor levels for using the instruments and the track in the middle is for a lift to bring you to the different levels."

"We have no complaints about your powers of observation."

"Is the control of such a machine so complicated that all these instruments are necessary?"

"The control of the ship does not require all these instruments. They are for other purposes. To explain it we must begin at the beginning. "This landing unit is a part of the huge mother ship. It can release itself and operate independently in space and land on planets. In the normal situation, these landing units are an integral part of the mother ship. You must realize that the central wheel of a landing unit is one of the two steering wheels of the mother ship. We will show you a landing unit in action and then you will understand better."

The view changed. Right in front of me was a huge discus. I saw only the upper surface, pockmarked with burns and melted stone masses. Then, slowly, out of this monster, rose a tiny black pole that I recognized as the black pole approximately five feet in diameter. Then appeared the shining rim of the navigation dome. Immediately after, a small discus rose out of the middle of the spaceship as though it was forcefully pushed away. The thing accelerated and disappeared as a speck of light in the background of stars. It was an asymmetrical discus of much smaller dimensions. Its upper surface matched the curve of the mother ship perfectly, but the underside was more rounded and it had a conical rim. Also on the underside was a further thickening in the form of a flat dome. The mother ship was left with a deep bowl in the middle, in which the landing unit fitted.


IARGA
Space Excursion Vessel
Top
Dark dull gray color
Bottom
Non reflective finish
D=330
largan space-exploration mother-ship
Space convoy of 5 large ships fly line-astern
Estimated 1000' diam
Fuel in water
Detachable modules 250' diameter top and bottom
Large ships may be coupled in stack through detachable modules
Large ship lands only in water on home planet
Smaller unit lands on tripod legs
D=80m
Coupling device on top and also on bottom of the detachable modules
Thousand foot diameter space excursion vessel.

"Is the landing unit's navigation dome as big as this?"

"Yes."

"Good heavens-then the unit must be at least two hundred and fifty feet in diameter."

"That is nearly correct."

"Inconceivable!"

"Exactly. The technical know-how that goes into the building of a universal spacecraft is beyond the conception of Earth men. This navigation dome is the nerve center of the spaceship. Imagine what is involved in navigation and communication, what is needed only in instruments, data records and calculating machines. Each navigation dome can carry out all the control functions of the, entire fleet, including climate control, food production, entertainment and the study program for the children. All in all, too much to mention, but we can assure you that the number of instruments is kept to an absolute minimum." "Exactly. The technical know-how that goes into the building of a universal spacecraft is beyond the conception of Earth men. This navigation dome is the nerve center of the spaceship. Imagine what is involved in navigation and communication, what is needed only in' instruments, data records and calculating machines. Each navigation dome can carry out all the control functions of the entire fleet, including climate control, food production, entertainment and the study program for the children. All in all, too much to mention, but we can assure you that the number of instruments is kept to an absolute minimum."

"What did you say? Study programs for the children? Do you have children on board?"

"Yes, we are not just an expedition. We live on board with our wives and children, sometimes for twenty years or more. Space is our home. For people seeking contemplation as the greatest happiness, the warm intimate contact is a life experience and a mental enrichment that we would not miss for anything. You could compare us to your monks. We wish to live and die among the stars."

"Yes, you must be rather like monks if you lead your lives in a steel box."

"You have no idea of the comfort on board our ships, but we will leave it at that."

"How long can you keep the sun wheel constantly in motion?"

"long time, even up to twenty years; then we must refuel."

"So you must make sure that you are back on your own planet within that time?"

"No, our fuel is water. The oxygen is used for ourselves and the hydrogen is our source of energy. Many solar systems have a wet planet and this is usually the goal of our journey, so finding water is no problem. Our landing units are fitted out for the efforts to publish

transportation of water. This is how they are able to remain under water like your

submarines."

"So you only take water on board?"

"That is so.

"Then what do you eat over all the years?"

"This is one of the main problems involved with the construction of universal spaceships. The technique is only half the problem. The other half is making a livable environment on board with a 100 percent recycling system. It is difficult to keep intelligent beings alive under space conditions.

"We can give you no more information about our spacecraft, this was more than enough and we have reached the end of our talk. If you wish to ask anything special, this is your last chance."

"You surely cannot leave without giving me instructions as to how I am to publish this conversation?"

"Do not expect us to give you instructions, you are free to do as you will, our work is done. The knowledge has been planted, and even if you should decide to do nothing, it has also been planted in the collective consciousness of man, of which you have the knowledge. Millions of the departed have listened with you, they know as well as you do."

"I don't understand; on the one hand you impress upon me the importance of this information to humanity at the end of time, and on the other hand you tell me that I am free to publish or not; I can't make head or tail of this!"

"The first law of interplanetary contacts is that the free will of a cosmic race may never be infringed. Pure knowledge does not infringe the freedom unless we are dealing with a race that has not yet made its choice, as we are here.

"Let us begin with the first observation; knowledge does not infringe freedom. This means that we are permitted to plant knowledge, and nothing more than that. We may never exert any kind of pressure to make you do anything with this knowledge. This is why we tell you that the knowledge is planted in the collective consciousness of man, sooner or later it must come to the surface. You have no obligations at all, you are free.

"The second observation causes greater problems. Knowledge can influence the freedom of choice of an ignorant race, as we have already explained; and certainly when this knowledge is presented with authority, or by one means or the other, it can be made indisputable.

"This is why you must never try to prove our existence, and the proof of the existence of God may only be used when all other efforts to publish have failed."

"You can rest assured that I would hate myself if I did not publish this knowledge. I assume that you could still give me some advice when I am ready to publish?"

"When it is obvious that you have chosen of your own free will, we will be prepared to give you a few hints. The first thing you must do is to control the impact of your publication to prevent hysteria and fanaticism. You can only accomplish this by being mysterious about the source of your information. *We know that you have made photos of our navigation dome and you must destroy them*. The block of metal which we offered you at the beginning of our conversation cannot be given anymore. If, however, you do manage to find some proof of our existence, things will get out of hand and you will be destroyed by the hysteria of mankind. Write your book in clear sciencefiction style and bring in certain, so that it cannot be used as irrefutable logic. **You must leave people free to believe or not, as they choose.** If anyone should ask you if it really happened, you must deny it and say that it is pure imagination.

The people for whom the book is destined will say: 'I am not interested whether it really happened or not; for me, it is true. It has changed my insight and now I live consciously. I know the meaning behind life.'

"Honesty is dangerous for you and no measure in interplanetary contacts. Therefore, you must not publish all the information in one shot, but step by step and measure the results. *Never strive to be believed*. Your duty is only to publish this information and nothing more. Let the books lead their own lives and avoid publicity stunts. **They will then pass from hand to hand and reach the people for whom they are intended.** Insure that they are published in a sufficient number of languages and use the income from the book to this end. Make sure that it is *available at the end time* when people will begin to ask for it. *Never try to convince people of the truth in the book if they are not ripe for it, or if they are unable to understand it.* Never bring pressure to bear on your surroundings, for that will only create panic and hysteria. "Remain modest. Answer questions only from people who have for the most part understood the book and accepted it. Never say anything in conflict with the Christ insight such as it appears in the Bible. His authority is unassailable in the whole universe. He is the only way; the only truth and the life. "No one comes to the father except through him" (means: His way of living - foregiving everything you feel as injustice against you).

. "Our conversation is over. It is late and you must reach the harbor before dark. We are going to say our good-byes. Are you ready to leave?"

A feeling of despair began to come over me, mixed with a strange emotion. They were leaving; they were going to leave me alone! There were a great many more questions to ask, and who was going to help me when they were gone? I rose slowly and walked to the window so that I could see these eight space travelers once more at dose range.

"Yes, we must say good-bye. I shall miss you terribly. There is so much more to ask and to be explained, but what I shall miss most is your interest and affection for Us. The pleasant warmth that you call unselfishness. I will never be able to explain what this contact with you has done to me. It has in a short time made another man of me, with a wider horizon and a deeper insight. It has made me a man with purpose, and I have

received a commission which must be carried out.

"I will accept the challenge. Greet the people on Iarga and the other planets for me, and thank them for their part in this journey of yours that has made all this possible. Tell them that this man envies them their world of perfection, where intelligent people can really be happy. Tell them that I understand, in spite of the questions that have not yet been answered. And now it is my difficult task to thank you all for-"

"Stop, Stef. You do not have to thank Us. Our satisfaction in the fact that you have accepted the challenge makes thanks unnecessary, but there is still one big problem. You know how we worry that you will try to prove our existence and this would mean that we had gone too far. *You can relieve us of a great burden by promising to destroy the film and reframing from any attempt to collect proof*."

I smiled, a little regretfully. "I have even understood and accepted the ethics of interplanetary contacts. I assure you on my word of honor that I will destroy the film and refrain from trying to collect any kind of proof"

The disinterested attitude of the eight suddenly changed. They got up and came to stand in a half circle around the window. For the first time, I saw some kind of emotional reaction on their faces.

"*You have taken a great weight off our minds.* We trust your honesty and you have therefore made it possible for US to allow you to leave unhindered with all your knowledge. Only now do we feel justified in doing this. Operation cosmic integration Earth is a success. A heavy burden has been lifted from Us.

"We rely on you to understand that it is our duty to convince ourselves that you have destroyed the film, and we ask you to do so before you step on board your ship, and dearly within sight of the black pole. Thereafter, we will let your ship loose, and leave. "Farewell, Stef, and we wish you the courage to trust. May the inspiration of the Spirit of truth accompany you on your journey. Farewell."

Above my head the hatch opened. The eight creatures made a respectful bow with one hand held against their foreheads. I returned the greeting in the same manner. "Farewell, a thousand thanks."

A while later, Miriam and the children stood wide eyed to observe the sight of a man with a thoughtful expression who stood up to his knees in the water and opened a camera. He than pulled the film out and threw it in the water. He then waved in the direction of the black pole as a last greeting, and climbed on board. It was a beautiful, windless evening and we all stood on board waiting and wondering what was going to happen. For the last time we heard the zooming noise as the navigation dome retracted, but this time the intricately formed black pole remained extended. Shortly afterwards, a dull shock went through the ship, as the astronauts released US and the ship floated once again in its element. We started drifting with the tide and we could hear the anchor chain scraping over the surface of the spaceship until it reached the edge; then the anchor fell and the chain jerked tight.

As I began to wind up the chain, I heard the propulsion system of the spaceship start working and the black pole began moving through the water, seaward. I stood watching from the foredeck and was surprised when I noticed how slowly they were traveling; it could not have been more than six or seven knots. It suddenly came to me that perhaps they did not dare to go any faster with the huge discus in this water, which was full of sandbanks and shallows, and at the same time the idea occurred to me that I could perhaps follow them for a while and might even be able to see something of the takeoff. I ran aft and quickly started the motor and followed the broad form wake at full power, dispite the protests of Miriam, who could not see the glamour of this new adventure. In half an hour we had left the coast of the inlands of Walcheren and Schouwen behind Us and were on the open sea.

The sun had set in a beautiful red glow and the still dark water swelled slowly. It had been a strange voyage. The complete loneliness, the wide expanse of water, and, mostly, the presence of the strange machine put a pressure on all of US against which my stubbornness was no match. As soon as I lost sight of the wake left by the spaceship, I stopped the motor and left the ship to float on its own while we all had a cup of coffee. In this complete stillness we sat on deck, tense and listening. Just as I had decided to give up and return to harbor, we heard the jangling sound of the propulsion in the distance. I jumped up, put the binoculars before my eyes and began feverishly scanning the water. Miriam saw it first.

"There, Stef, a light!"

Through the binoculars I saw a huge disc that, with a swaying motion, rose out of the water. The light was caused by a sparkling halo that spread over the whole visible surface of the spaceship. Close to the water it was yellow-orange, further up yellow-green and on top blue, and thanks to this lighting effect, I was able to see the discus quite plainly despite the distance. Suddenly the noise and the intensity of the light increased. Some few seconds later the machine disappeared in a huge cloud of steam. Shortly thereafter, it appeared again above the cloud, a huge glowing discus that rose at a steep angle in the form of a spiral with our ship as its middle point. The sight was much more impressive than the films I had seen of space. Actually, there was very little of the discus to be seen; it was surrounded by an orange-red cloud that prevented a dear view. Around this cloud hung a huge misty halo which made the spaceship look bigger than it really was.The fiery light caused a cry of alarm to come from Miriam. She thought that something had gone wrong, but I was able to reassure her.

"It is quite normal. Things glow with heat when the propulsion is working."

We stood breathlessly looking at this unearthly, indescribably impressive show of power from these beings, who, as a final gesture, flew in a huge circle round our ship, then rapidly dwindled to a tiny point of red light that was soon lost in the darkness of the evening sky. Despite my triumphant feeling that I had succeeded in seeing the takeoff, I felt strangely lonely, the sort of feeling that comes after saying good-bye to a good and

trusted friend. Miriam seemed to share something of my feelings, for she came and stood beside me and put her arm through mine. Before she could say anything, we again heard the screaming whine of the propulsion *and to our surprise another discus rose out of the water in the same place*. We witnessed the same display of sparks and the steam cloud, only this time it did not fly in a spiral, but went straight up like a rocket.

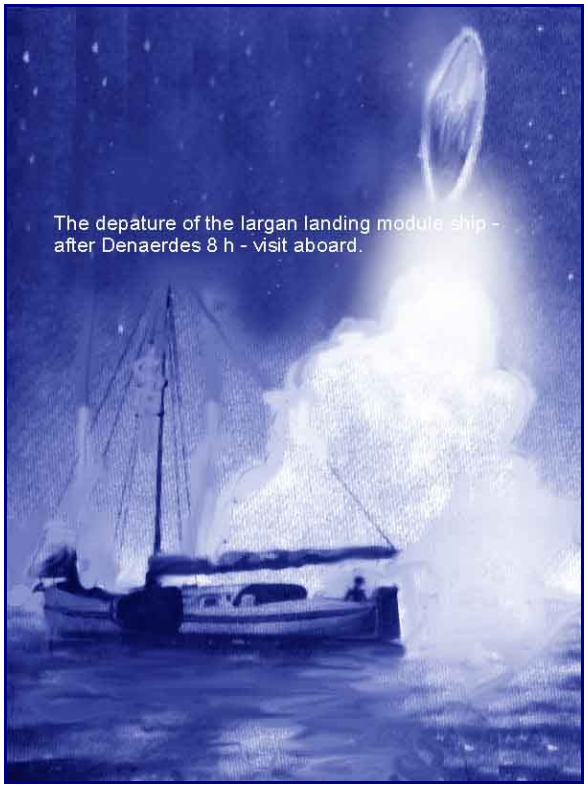
"Good heavens," whispered Miriam, "another one of those monsters. How many of them are there? Please, let's go. If another one goes off, I shall scream!"

I did not answer. I stood as if in a trance, staring at the point of light until it had disappeared into the night. For some minutes we stood still on the swaying deck, hoping or fearing that perhaps a third would take off, but nothing more happened. Suddenly Miriam gave a cry. "There, Stef, there they go!"

High in the dark sky, a speck of light had appeared. The first of the machines had broken free of the Earth's shadow and flew in the light of the sinking sun. Through the binoculars I saw a misty object that gave off an orange glow and was surrounded by a misty halo. This was followed shortly by the second one. Quite suddenly the halos vanished, and they were seemingly free of the atmosphere and proceeded as two cigar-shaped objects that were slowly swallowed up in the endlessness of space. Miriam lay her head on my shoulder.

"So, have you finished?" I sighed and put my arm around her.

"No, dear. They-" and I pointed to the place where they had vanished, "they are finished, but for Us it has just begun!"



PUBLISHER'S NOTE:

The exact date and time of this first contact event are in fact known as well as other evidential support. There are other witnesses and there is material evidence supporting this story, but in keeping with the contactee's solemn promise never to try to PROVE the reality of the story or the actual existence of the Iargans, for very good reason, we have chosen not to reveal it. Wendelle C.Stevens

PART II

Philosophy

Editor's Note: The information in this Part 2 is not for everyone. When it was originally transmitted, during many months following the initial contact, the witness was carefully instructed not to release any of it until he was given the time. As the first part of this edition of this book, the original contact story, was being typeset for printing, the Iargans re-contacted the witness and authorized him to release the second manuscript printed here as Part 2 of this book, which you are now about to read. Only those who are ready will understand. The others will find this uninteresting to them and will not continue reading it.

During the first visit aboard the spacecraft the witness was given some kind of conditioning which made him receptive to sights and sounds, something like the way it was done mechanically aboard the ship, and after that the Iargans could "tune him in" and transmit sounds and images with what seemed like 3-dimensional reality. The contacts continued and hundreds of pages of notes, sketches, and diagrams were made. These are collected in this section on Iargan philosophy.

These notes describe the origin of the Universe, both non-physical and physical, ours and theirs, and the origin and development of both spiritual and physical rational creatures, and how they are influenced. They also discuss the plurality of life and the great variety of intelligent creatures in this vast universe and their purpose.

THE COSMIC INTEGRATION OF EARTH

This information was handed over by the crew of an Iargan spaceship with the intention to lift the cosmic isolation of humanity.

CHAPTER 1

The great improbability: Proof of God's existence.

As I have said, the aim of this presentation is to break open theEarth's isolation. Isolation does not only mean the absence of contact with other intelligent beings, but also the ignorance surrounding the Creator and the goal of His creation. Our ignorance in this is an essential part of the great plan.

The idea of breaking our isolation can only be entertained when we are "knowledgeable" and this means that denial of God's existence must have practically vanished from this earth. Atheism is just ignorance according to them.

With this in mind, they dictated this first chapter as a direct or indirect proof that this universe is the almighty manifestation of an endless, and impersonal, creative intellect.

At first, I saw the remarkable idea of proving God's existence as a sort of curiosity, to be accepted for what it was worth; later, it became clear to me that this is a basic requirement for understanding of the further information. The destruction of Atheism is an important part of the plan of creation, because it would hinder the progress of humanity in the last days.

I am certain that many people will now close this book and consign me to the ranks of the certified madmen; I would have done the same in their place. This does not restrain me from honestly warning my readers of the aims of this story to prevent them from feeling that they have been manipulated.

A very different question is, have I reached my aim? It must be quite obvious that a "coincidental" layman (sailor) cannot be expected to formulate scientific proof of the existence of God, even if he does have access to all the relevant information. Experts who have commented on the manuscript, have proved by the results of a logic test that no direct proof of God has been given; for one reason, that the story contains certain unproven axioms. I have rejected their offers of help in filling in the empty spaces because I feel that I must relay the information in its purest form, without any personal interpretations. It is also possible that the logic of an alien race is different from ours.

I will wait and see if their prophesies are correct that our scientists will quickly react to the newly released knowledge of the structure of the immaterial consciousness of matter and energy. We stand on the eve of the discovery of a new series of natural laws, with far-reaching consequences.

Matter is nothing more than the "filling" of the later described "spiritual reality." Knowledge of this structure leads to an exceptional power of manipulation of matter and energy; and also of the human mind. The true nature of a side-effect of this fact will then become clear, gravity; it is then fairly simple to neutralize it. We will then have "UFO" type aircraft flying around, powered by an anti-gravity vibrator and supported by the ground-echo of an anti-gravity ray. These sort of "proofs" will demonstrate the structure of the matter-consciousness and provide the direct proof of the existence of God. This knowledge contains a built-in "trigger," if I should fail to prove my argument, which is highly possible, the "trigger" will activate certain scientists or inventors to discover these secrets. The schedules are complete, it all sounds too fantastic to be true, but we will be there within the next few years; just wait and see.

The question remains, to what extent will this prove to be an indirect proof of the existence of God.

What other theories can be offered to logically explain all the wonders between heaven

and earth, but which do not have the basis of a creative intellect. They argue that it is impossible. To humans, the plan of creation realizes a complete impossibility. The plan is so complex and genial, that no human could ever have thought of it. Knowledge of it can only be obtained at the source, nobody could offer an alternative plan that is logical and yet deny the almighty intellect as the starting point. I have no more worries on this point, but the debate will have to prove it.

My advice to the reader in this is to ignore the question of proof. Their story of the creation is not easy to understand, but it is neat and tidy. The story is complete and logical to those who will read it critically but without prejudice. It tells everything, even the closest kept secrets of the universe, and the truth is so plain to see that many will no longer require any proof.

This entire communication was transmitted in Holland Dutch language in terms and mind symbols familiar to the witness. All terms for Deity may be considered one aspect of polarity. All terms for Lucifer and Satan represent the necessary other aspect and may not be exactly what the reader was taught in catechism.

The extent of our knowledge.

I think it may be useful to begin with a short summary of our conceptions of the size and origin of the universe. The size and extent are gigantic; outside our milky-way, that contains about two hundred-billion stars, we see other star systems, billions of them, each containing billions of stars. The more our telescopes improve, the more stars we discover and the greater the distance at which we discover still more stars, billions of light-years away from us. The number of stars must be many more than a billion times a billion, and the end is still not in sight. The space that we can see has a diameter of roughly twenty billion light-years while light travels at a speed of three hundred thousand kilometres per second. The size of the universe is so far beyond our powers of understanding that it alienates us. It seems ridiculous to suggest that all this has no purpose.

At the limits of our optical observations, we see star systems rushing away from us at impossible speeds, up to half the speed of light.

This can only mean that we live in an expanding universe. This expansion can be explained back to a start in which all matter was confined in one clearly defined area. The expansion is assumed to have begun here, some thirteen billion years ago, with a primeval explosion, the big bang. According to this theory, the universe must have had a beginning.

Disregarding the question of the truth of this theory, the intriguing fact of a beginning remains, we arrive at the same theory from the calculations of the age of stars. Many astronomers and scientists seriously take into account that the universe "originated" at some particular moment. As long as we do not know how this happened, we can only accept this as a reasonable assumption.

THE GREAT AXIOM

To get down to business, the Iargan creation story begins roughly at this point, the origin. Their explanation rests on one GREAT AXIOM: Something can NOT be created from nothing. At first, this seems to be perfectly logical, but we come to a problem when we substitute the word "universe" for something, we have no choice but to give that it does exist, it was "created."

Quite honestly, it would seem to me to be ridiculous to accept the idea that matter has always existed, *ad infinitum*: but for the good order of things, I must prove it here.This proof begins with three related arguments:

1.An infinite quantity of matter would completely fill space, so energy and matter must be finite.

2.When one characteristic of something is finite, then all its characteristics must be finite. Matter is then finite in all respects; speed, quantity, distance, etc.

3.Time as the counterpart of matter is therefore finite; even if it should continue forever.

The last statement requires some explanation; time exists by the grace of matter, and is defined as the propagation of the vibration in the force-field of an atom. (see Appendix)

Time is therefore bound by a finite speed, the repetition of finite events, popularly compared to the ticking of a clock. No matter how many millions of years a clock should continue ticking, the result will never be infinite, in other words, even the eternal continuance of finite events never results in infinity. Even after millions of years, not one second of eternity would have passed. Unlimited continuance can never become infinite. From these three arguments we conclude that time matter, and energy had a beginning and were therefore"created."

What could have been the origin of the gigantic quantity of matter and energy that exists in the universe? Could it have come from the void?

The answer we get from their standpoint is:

Axiom: Something can never be created from nothing.

Submission: The universe was created.

First conclusion: the creation is nothing more or less than the mutation of what already existed.

The conclusion is logical and simple but it is worth a lot of critical thought, because from we obtain the equally logical and simple, irrefutable, proof of the existence of God. This argument can be upheld by proving that the "nothing" never existed, and that the "already existing" has always existed.

Eternity.

What can we say about the "already existing" before the creation?

Second statement: If ever in the; past the total "nothing" had existed, it would have been permanent.

Submission: The total "nothing" was not permanent.

Second conclusion: The "already existing" has always existed and is infinite in time; the total "nothing" has never existed.

It then seems that the "already existing" is the same as the "eternal". It has always existed, and will continue to exist, without a beginning and without an end.

The second conclusion does not substantiate the axiom because it is derived from it. The substantiation will have to be found by another approach that does not begin by the existence of the universe.

This original form of all that now exists is therefore indestructible; it does not age and it does not change, it is absolute. In future, the "already existing" will be referred to as the ABSOLUTE.

Third statement: The ABSOLUTE is infinite in time (see second conclusion).

Submission: Time can never be infinite because it is a limited mechanism.

Third conclusion: Then the definition of time in the ABSOLUTE is different form our definition of time.

Actually, we could have known this because the ABSOLUTE is the original form of all existence, also of time. In other words, eternity is not the eternal continuance of our time, but a completely different kind of time.

Definitions of the infinite.

The conclusion that the ABSOLUTE exists in infinite time introduces the concept of infinity. Here we come across the problem that many people are so used to the mathematical meaning of the term infinity, that they have the greatest difficulty in thinking in terms of the ABSOLUTE infinity. The latter is an existential infinity, the endlessness of being, or THE being, that encompasses all consciousness, all intelligence, and all creativity. Due to the fact that Earthly sciences almost exclusively use the mathematical abstraction, I will only use the term when it can be mathematically justified.

1.One fundamental quality of the infinite is that it is indivisible; division results in finiteness.

2.To make it clear that existential infinity is a totality, and therefore also contains the finite, we can make use of a mathematical comparison using the progression of that

number. As soon as one progression is infinite, it contains every progression of every finite number, no matter how large this may be. The infinite therefore contains all the possibilities of any progression. This argument stems from the illimitability of the infinite and is therefore also valid for values other than numbers. It then follows that infinity encompasses all finite possibilities in an infinite progression.

3.The existential infinity is indivisible and contains all possibilities; it is therefore ONE infinity, and never more.

4.*Mathematically*: As soon as the power of a number (through the progression) becomes endless, all the powers become endless.

5.*Existential*: As soon as it is proved that one possibility or property of anything is infinite, then all the properties are infinite because it is then unbounded.

Fourth statement: When one property of something is infinite, then all the properties are infinite, and it is indivisible.

Submission: The ABSOLUTE exists in infinite time.

Fourth conclusion: Then the ABSOLUTE is infinite in all respects and is the infinite origin of all existence; the ABSOLUTE ALL.

The existence of unlimited possibilities.

They thus argued that the universe was nothing more that mutation of the infinite ABSOLUTE. The question then arises was this creation the only possible mutation of the ABSOLUTE?

Fifth statement: The ABSOLUTE contained ALL possibilities for mutation because it was unbounded.

Submission: The universe is only ONE of the many possible appearances of the ABSOLUTE.

Fifth conclusion: The present creation is then just ONE of, an unlimited number of other possibilities. The ABSOLUTE is then almighty, and was capable of many other creations.

Now that the ALL-mighty has been mentioned, it is interesting to ask if the ABSOLUTE can be called the creator of the universe.

After the definitions of infinity, the answer becomes easy.

Sixth statement: The ABSOLUTE possessed ALL possibilities, and therefore, at least all the possibilities that exist now.

Submission: Humans possess the possibilities of conscious thought, intelligence, personality, and creativity.

Sixth conclusion: The ABSOLUTE possessed an infinite, all-encompassing consciousness with an infinite intelligence; an infinite number of ego possibilities, and with an infinite almighty creative power that was bound into the indivisible unity of the infinity, the infinite, almighty ALL-consciousness, the Creator. This explains the existence of the one almighty Creator of the universe as clearly as possible.

The axiom is still acceptable but not proved; something cannot be created from nothing. Only when this has been demonstrated beyond a doubt can there be talk of proof.

The infinity of the NOTHING

Seventh statement: The ALL-consciousness contained ALL possibilities and was indivisible.

Submission: The non-existing, or the "nothing" is also a possibility.

Seventh conclusion: Then the ALL-consciousness also possessed the possibility of the NOTHING and the ALL is also the NOTHING. Then ALL and NOTHING must be an indivisible unity.

It is clear that this conclusion leads us into a fogbank where we are in danger of losing our senses of order and logic. Are we guilty of a serious fault in our thinking? Does NOTHING qualify as infinite?

More's the pity, it does. The NOTHING is the complete, boundless dark emptiness that has no end. It is also the only eternity that we are able to imagine; nothing, the endless void, no speck of dust, no glimmer of light, no movement, no ageing, no change; indivisible nothing.

Nothing with which to judge time. Can time exist in complete emptiness? Time is movement, and without movement there can be no time, although the possibility for time did exist. If one small movement had taken place, time would have been created.

Then the difference between our time and absolute time is that the all consciousness was not limited by time, was timeless and motionless, but contained the possibility for time.

In other words, the nothing complies with the requirements of the absolute as we have defined them. It is infinite in all respects and exists in infinite time. This confirms the seventh conclusion, that is clear.

What is not so clear is what we have achieved with this conclusion. On the one hand the ABSOLUTE is EVERYTHING, and on the other hand, it is NOTHING. At first sight an impossible conclusion, because it may mean that the creation did take place from nothing.

The omnipotence of the infinite nothing.

How can THE ALL, under which our universe falls, at the same time be NOTHING?

The brain work needed to answer this question has already been done. This is only possible when the ALL consists of pure contradictions, or, put another way, when it is composed of counteracting principles that leave the inviolate NOTHING intact.

These principles can be regarded as the plus and minus of an electrical charge or the north and south pole of a magnet. For example, our universe must have an opposite in the form of a second universe in which matter is polarized exactly opposite, the anti-matter, that exists "somewhere". The existence of parallel worlds is explained in the other book. With this, we have discovered an important limitation of the ALL. It is certainly everything, but only by virtue of exact opposites that are integrally zero. To anyone thinking deeply over this, it soon becomes clear that the NOTHING has the upper hand in this game of possibilities. Everything in the ALL-consciousness was bound by the iron law of the cosmos, that everything must exist out of opposites, for the sake of the NOTHING. The NOTHING is then the origin of the infinity.

With this conclusion, the pieces of the puzzle begin to fall into place. Everything becomes clear when we turn the thing around and begin with the origin, the NOTHING.

Before the creation existed, NOTHING. The only difference being that the word means something other than what we usually think of in this context, this is why I use capitals. The NOTHING is infinite, and the infinite contains the ALL, the ALL-consciousness, but only so long as it exists out of absolute counteractions. The inevitable consequence of the endless dark emptiness was that it contained an almighty intellect. The endless nothing is the origin of the omnipotence of the ALL-consciousness, and this last is the power of the infinite NOTHING.

Statement 1. Prior to the creation was the infinite NOTHING.

Statement 2.The infinite obviously contained all possibilities, the ALL.

Statement 3. The NOTHING could only contain counteracting principles or contradictions that integrally amounted to nothing (zero).

Statement 4.Then the NOTHING is the ALL that is composed of contradictions.

Statement 5.The ALL had the ability to create the present universe as long as it existed out of contradictions that left the original infinity of the NOTHING unchanged.

Conclusion: The total NOTHING in the axiom has never existed, and with this, the axiom is proved.

The "REALLY EXISTING"

The question now arises, to what extent is it possible to regard contradictions that amount to zero, as something or nothing? With this, we can discuss the first conclusion to the axiom, and approach it in a different way.

Axiom: Something can never be created from nothing.

Submission: The universe exists.

Conclusion: Then for all intents and purposes, the universe is nothing.

This Conclusion is also completely valid, the ALL and the NOTHING are identical, but this does not invalidate the first conclusion.

The "Something" in the axiom is undoubtedly the matter, time, and energy in the universe; and this is undoubtedly the mutation of something that always existed.

In the last conclusion, our universe, which is bound by a time-synchronisation field to an anti-universe, is viewed from the point of the timeless infinity. From this point of view, the counterbalanced creation is indeed the NOTHING; but for those who live in one universe, the other anti-universe is not relevant.

For the ALL-consciousness, this creation was nothing more that the mutation of the ABSOLUTE counteracting principle, a mutation of the NOTHING, because the ALL was the NOTHING, the not "really existing".

Absolute opposites are, and remain, NOTHING. Only when the contradictions are resolved and are no longer tied to each other as opposite poles of a magnet, can the NOTHING become reality.

The aim of the creation is the abolition of the many contradictions through which the "REALLY EXISTING" will come into being. The axiom of the creation is therefore different when viewed by the ALL-consciousness; SOMETHING can be created from

NOTHING. This means exactly the same as The "REALLY EXISTING" can be created from ALL. Zero and infinity are always the same here.

With these additions, the proof of the existence of GOD has been demonstrated. It is true that the almighty Creator of the universe will change into the "REALLY EXISTING" GOD, but this is of little importance, because GOD has the pure identity of the CREATOR.

The meditating infinite.

Now it becomes interesting to get to know something about the being of the infinite ALL-consciousness. How do we cope with the thought of an almighty consciousness that was the immutable ALL; and that existed, timeless and immobile in the infinite dark emptiness. It doesn't sound very attractive.

Can such a thing think? It encompasses all possibilities in their original form, also thought. How should we visualize this? The answer that logic dictates is perfectly clear. Thought is deduction, combination, and change, because it adds new thoughts to the ones that already exist. The infinite was immutable, therefore it could not think. An impossible conclusion when associated with a creative intellect.

Can we reconcile this? We can. The addition of new thoughts to the ALL-consciousness was not possible because IT already contained ALL thought in an infinite thought sequence. IT contained ALL possibilities, and no new possibilities could be added, ever. The ALL-consciousness, could therefore not think.

Now we are on the right track; the AL~consciousness did not need to think. IT was above thought because IT knew ALL thought in ALL time, also in the future.

How can a finite thought exist in the infinite? Exactly the same way as a finite number can exist in an endless progression. The flow of thought existed continuously in ALL time, through an infinite number of time directions from the past to the future at an infinite time velocity.

The previous explanation simplifies the description of the infinite, to time standing still, without mentioning the fact that time can only stand still as a result of opposites in time speed and direction. In the infinite, the time moved at infinite speed in ALL possible directions from past to future and back again. ALL time existed simultaneously. This situation can be compared to a weight flying around in a circle at the end of a piece of string; if the weight should reach (theoretically) infinite speed, it would be at ALL points of the circle at the same time. At any given point, the weight is always present, this symbolizes the infinite flow of thought that continually exists at every moment. So can infinite time be approached in two ways, from nil immobile "no time" and from infinite, mobile "ALL-time" from which the resultant time speed is nil, caused by the pure counteraction this ALL-time is in fact the omni-directional and omni-present time that we shall call "omni-time" (eternity). Every quality of the ALL-consciousness must be regarded in this way, as infinite, by which every thought continually existed through the infinite speed of time. Therefore, ALL thoughts in ALL possible futures existed, and are indestructible because they already existed "in the future." This is the law of the conservation of knowledge which extends to cover ALL the qualities of the ALL-consciousness. It has existed for ALL time. Through the indestructibility of ALL thought, the ALL-consciousness had an infallible memory system, the infinite, immutable, perfect knowledge. It knew ALL the mutations of ALL the possibilities, in ALL time and to the utmost consequences. It had an infinite intelligence, because IT knew the answer of any question that could ever be asked.

Every human was also known.

The ALL-consciousness knew ALL thoughts in ALL time, therefore also in our time. Then every human thought, no matter how simple, was also known. The arguments are simple, but the answer is almost inconceivable.

Then every human and every footstep was known, and chance does not exist, at least, not for the infinite ALL-consciousness. On the other hand, it is perfectly logical that the creator of the time should know the future. Time exists through counteractions, and is the not really existing. Further, it is just as logical that ALL-might (might of the ALL) and ALL-knowledge (knowledge of the ALL) go together. An almighty consciousness obviously knows what IT will know. The same kind of conclusion can be reached with regard to our own identity. The ALL-consciousness contained ALL the possibilities of ego-identities that were bound by the laws of the infinite into unity which existed eternally and was indestructible.

Then comes the question, ALL identity, so the human too? Why not? There was only one ALL-CONCIOUSNESS that contained ALL identities. The present human ego can only be a mutation of what already existed. The primeval form of our consciousness and our ego was a part of the ALL-consciousness and has always existed, and is indestructible. The Godly nucleus of our ego took part in the almighty creation that caused our universe to come into being. This makes us unknowing gods that had the perfect knowledge, but the obliteration of our memory is so complete that our "conscience" had no more factual knowledge. This conclusion is hopeful. If we took part in the creation process, not as spectators, but as an essential part of the creative consciousness of the creative unity, then it is impossible that we now live a purposeless life. On the contrary, our existence must have a purpose with great importance, but also with great risks. No freedom without risks.

An undefined consciousness.

From this contour sketch of the NOTHING, an imposing silhouette appears from the endless dark emptiness. An infinite consciousness that was capable of any creation. IT could choose from an unlimited number of possibilities, whatever IT wanted, would happen.

IT enclosed in IT-self, tens of thousands of possibilities of creations equal to ours, with ALL the thoughts, knowledge, and experience connected to them. IT saw through ALL time, knew every future, and every being in every detail.

The ALL-knowledge is inconceivable.

The completeness is the most impressive aspect of this existence, but the aspects of infinity are easier to reason. This comes from the infinity of time in which finite values exist indefinitely, continuing in OMNI-time, eternal and indestructible. It is the factor through which the finite becomes infinite, the condition for existence in the NOTHING,

next to the condition of counteraction.

The ALL-consciousness was unlimited in its possibilities, and therefore also UNDEFINED. ALL was still an hypothesis with infinite probability. It was and it was not. And yet it was the irrefutable reality from which the whole universe was created, but it was not, because it had not manifested IT-self in anything. The choice had not be~ made, only the consciousness WAS. It was unbounded in time, and therefore there was no sense of time. It was unlimited in its possibilities of identity, so equally, there was no sense of ego. The character and nature were also not defined.

The spirit, the intelligence and the knowledge, was defined. The spirit of ALL-knowledge was perfect, but the being was not yet defined. Through this, it was determined WHO would use the spirit. Who was the ALL-consciousness before the mutation?

It was nobody!

Through this, the NOTHING had terrifying possibilities with unfathomable risks. IT could produce the most loving, noble and attractive or the cruellest, ugliest monster that surpasses human imagination. This consciousness of the nothing existed of contradictions, both results were possible. The possibilities were unlimited, what would emerge from the endless dark emptiness; and with what purpose?

A temporary universe.

After this exploration of the basic conditions, we can make a cautious start with the story of the creation. By one means or another, the ALL-consciousness underwent a miraculous change that we now see as the creation. This change was complex in extremes, and I have therefore split the story into three sections, each of which describe a part of the complexity. The following part of this chapter gives a description of the manipulations that were necessary for the change.

The second chapter deals with the changes in consciousness, and the book of physics explains the physical aspects of the creation mechanism with a description of the infinitely strong three-dimensional vibration field, the Cosmic Unified Field.

The infinity of the ALL-consciousness was a great problem by the creation, at least for us to be able to understand it. There is simply nothing to begin with. It is immutable, indivisible, infinite, indestructible; nothing can be added, nothing new can exist, etc, etc. It just IS, immovable, ponderous, immobile. It is the eternal, immutable hypothesis with infinite probability. How was it possible that this could ever change?

Statement: The infinite is unchangeable, only the finite is changeable.

Submission: The change did take place.

Conclusion: Then the infinity must have been lifted or blocked; a possibility that must always have existed.

Here we come across the concept of "bounding" or the limitation of the infinite. I have already explained that the "common factor" for the existence of finite values in infinity, must be sought in the undetermined infinity of the time. The bounds were therefore first laid on the time. In my book, the phenomenon creation is always regarded as the limitation of time, even though it can be explained by other means. As soon as one feature of anything becomes finite, ALL its features become finite; it is therefore not necessary to use more than one to illustrate the explanation. The limitation of the infinite timespeed and the time direction was enough to limit the complete ALL-Consciousness.

The problem with finite time is that it cannot exist on its own. Time is the progress of the vibration in the force field of an atom, and is a result of matter. Inertia creates finite time. Matter and energy had to exist in order to bound the infinite NOTHING, and at the same moment, the dimensions of time and space came into being. It would appear that the creation of matter was only necessary to limit the infinite in order to change it, and that this was necessary for the creation of the really existing in the future (the resolution of the contradiction).

This is precisely the aim of the creation of matter. It is a temporary means of creating the really existing. We can now divide the creation process into two separate actions; the dissolution of the immutable, and the real change.

The limitation.

In this chapter, we will only discuss the principles of the limitation; the working of these principles, with among other things, the time synchronization, will be explained in the physics book.

1.The limitation came about through the creation of matter and energy.

2.The infinite was indivisible. It was therefore impossible to limit only a part of the ALL-consciousness, it had to be completely.

3.The infinite was timeless, therefore it could not be temporarily limited; it had to be for ever. It was also impossible to phase the limitation.

Conclusion: The limitation of the ALL-consciousness was unique, total, and irrevocable.

Let's take the next step.

How does the principle of the limitation work? How, and by whom can the infinite be limited?

A rather wanting example may serve to clarify the matter. Imagine an object moving at infinite speed. Physics tells us that no matter how much effort is applied to brake the object, its speed will always be infinite. Only when it is braked with an infinite power, will the result be a finite speed.

The braking would generate a gigantic amount of energy. The braking of the infinite

time speed of the ALL, produced a gigantic amount of energy. This example brings us to the following conclusion.

1.The infinite(speed) can only be limited by another infinite (power).

2.Only one infinite existed, so it could only be limited by IT-self. Then follows that the other infinity must have come from the first one, but could not have been a part of the first, or it would never have been "the other".

3.The possibility of this other infinity must have existed in the ALL-consciousness (immutable) which means that it existed of contradictions. Then the counteracting ALL-consciousness limited IT-self by a contradicting infinite power or force field. (see book of the physics of the carrier field)

4.The limitation came about because the infinity of the ALL-consciousness transformed IT-self into the other infinity of the limiting force field whereby two infinities have never existed together, no more than no infinity (indestructible). A sudden infinity transmutation must have taken place where just as suddenly, ALL matter and energy, together with time and space dimensions, must have come into being.

5.The energy came from the limitation, and may therefore be referred to as the limitation energy.

The point of ALL this is the other infinite that limited the infinity of the ALL. It could not have been a part of the first infinite, because then it would have been limited along with it, and no longer been infinite. This was impossible because the infinite was causal and indestructable (has existed through ALL time).

The cause of the limitation.

This other infinity can be discussed in still another way. The lightening creation was a necessary condition in attaining the mutability of the ALL-consciousness. The actual change was still to come, of necessity, after the limitation. The goal of creation must then be something that is finite and limited.

The conclusion is simple; if the goal is finite, it could not have existed in the infinite, and it must be SOMETHING new. This seems to be an unnecessary conclusion; it would be foolish to imagine that this creation was only a repetition of what already existed, but on the other hand, something new would be a violation of the immutability.

How could something new exist in the infinite?

The answer is simple, the infinite contained everything, every possible (and for us impossible) mutation of anything; and therefore it must have been capable of many different creations, each with something new that of necessity could not exist in the infinite. What conditions were imposed on the goal of this creation?

The infinite ALL was composed of contradictions that left the essential infinity of the NOTHING intact. ALL possibilities were integrally NOTHING, or not really existing.

Was there then no single possibility that really existed?

Certainly, there was one thing that really existed, and that was the NOTHING which blocked the contradictions, the basic and dominant feature of the ALL. Through the immutability of the NOTHING, the REALLY EXISTING had no chance to manifest. Only the manifestation of one of the existing possibilities to be REALLY EXISTING could negate the immutability of the NOTHING. On the other hand we have the fact that the SOMETHING could not exist in the infinity because it had to be bound to time and limits.

It seems that we have faultlessly demonstrated that the creation was impossible. The reasoning is perfect, but the conclusion that this leads to an impossibility, is wrong.

1.The aim to create SOMETHING, the reality, was the motivation of the will of the ALL-consciousness; but it was not a wish with uncertain consequences as we have.

2.The almighty, intelligent objective of the ALL: The Word, created the time and therefore determined ALL future events; including the goal.

Conclusion: The almighty Word contained the goal of the creation in IT-self, and the Word was the opposite of the NOTHING. The Word was the reality SOMETHING that created the time at the moment of the limitation and thereby the SOMETHING became definite. The time plays no role in the infinite, it is composed of contradictions and does not really exist.

From the King James Version of the Christian Bible

John 1. "in the beginning was the Word" (and nothing else).

THE WORD.

The goal of the creation was unique and irrevocable, and was as such, again immutable. This had to be so because the goal contained the other infinity that limited the first, and the laws of the infinite are valid for the new infinity. It is again immutable. The irrevocability of the goal caused an extra complication, it had to be valid not only for the infinite, but also for the finite. In fact, the real goal could only originate in the finite. The ALL had to create consciousness contradictions in the infinite, and reconcile them in the finite.

The Word may therefore be compared to a computer program which is used to regulate a process and must remain valid for the complete process. The process and the program both demand that the creativity of the programmer be accomplished before the process begins (creation in advance).

Which contradictions had to be revoked? Also those of time, matter, and energy? Possible, but the question is unimportant.

Matter is only a temporary means of creating time, and with it, the mutability. When the creation was complete, the material time could have been dispensed with, for example,

when matter appeared to be finite, but this is not the point, there is a much more essential question.

What could be the point of creating something that really existed, when the creator Himself did not really exist? It seems completely logical that after the self-bounding, the self-mutation of the original ALL-consciousness into a really existing consciousness took place that was not constrained by contradictions. Can there be any doubt that the first aim of the creation was the self mutation of the Creator so that he can say "I AM"?

The power to change that is necessary for the creation of the goal is a self-mutating power of a consciousness that can not exist in the infinite, only in the finite. When this creative power could not exist in the infinite, the goal must have the will to begin with this form of creativity. Because no difference exists between past and future in the infinite, we can omit the word "begin."

The almighty Will that created the universe must also be infinite and exist of contradictions. Further, creativity is the power to change something for a particular reason. First the goal, then the Will, then the action. The same goes for the creativity of the infinite. First came the goal, and this motivated the almighty will that manifested IT-self in counteractions. The will to a certain type of creativity was the new infinity that bounded the old infinity. Since then, the Will is irrevocable, immutable, and infinite; but creates the finite.

Because the infinite Will must consist of contradictions and these cannot be dispensed with, IT is the not really existing for ALL eternity, but IT is the creator of the really existing. It is the new infinite creative power through which the goal will come into being. The Will is the means, not the end.

"In the beginning was the Word," and only the Word.

CHAPTER 2

THE UNBOUNDED ABSOLUTE BOUNDED

The original unbounded absolute, ALL-identity.

The indeterminacy of the ALL-consciousness was caused, among other reasons, by the fact that IT contained ALL identities bound into a unity. What kind of identity could exist there in the dark emptiness of the void? Was it something that resembled our ego? It must have been something like it, because our ego developed from it.

The characteristics of our ego (our I AM) are: the realization of our unique identity (origin and history), the feeling of self-respect (the AIM), and the will of self-expression (the INDIVIDUAL MANIFESTATION.) The original form of an ego (an I am) before

limitation I will refer to as an "entity".

This was rather more complicated in the infinite; there was not only the will for self-expression, but also the will to really exist. The absolute entity contained, beside the goal of self-respect, the goal of another creation equal to the present one, that would lead to the real existence of his ego. An absolute entity is therefore much more comprehensive than ours and comparison is impossible. Each entity contained the power and the capacity for another creation, complete with all the knowledge, wisdom, and skill connected with it. They were unimaginable entities with absolute characters that contained the perfect knowledge in, as it were, a personal memory.

The ALL-consciousness must therefore be regarded as one consciousness with one knowledge and one will but with an alternating identity and an almighty power of mutation. If time and speech had existed, each entity would have had his turn to speak but would have had no influence on the senate of the tens of thousands because all entities were equal (because infinite).

Added to this was the fact that every aim necessarily existed of contradictions and that each entity possessed an indestructible character, contradiction (because infinite), and so existed an infinite polarization field that not one entity could breach. They all wanted something different, they were all equals and all wanted to dominate; so nothing happened.

This is the heart of the matter. Manifestation of a certain goal could only take place when all the other entities had identified themselves with it. In other words, our creation could not have taken place with a democratic majority but needed a unanimous decision, because ONE entity (being infinite) could have prevented it.

The choice was of the gravest importance. it was not only an irrevocable choice in the goal of the creation, but also of the character and mentality that they would acquire. Another consequence of this unanimity was that the goal had to be dualistic because all the opposing entities had to be able to identify themselves in it. The WORD was dualistic.

The goal of the creation.

The new creative power necessary to create the goal has been referred to as the self-mutating power of a consciousness that could only exist in the finite and that contained a power that humans also possess.

What power could this be?

Could LIFE be this new power? Did the ALL-consciousness LIVE before the limitation? Was life, this power of movement, change, and active manipulation, a possibility or an impossibility? It was an impossibility, the ALL did not live. It was immobile, and manipulation and creativity were impossible. It was the world of the spirit, of the almight and the alknowledge, of thought and the thoughts, of insight, wisdom and experience, but it did not live. Even so, life is not the new power we are seeking because

it is only the means of becoming creative. Only the living can be creative, but life is not automatically creative; an animal for example, does not change itself and is not creative. We shall have to find another power of self-mutation that could not exist in the infinite.

The power of the spirit can be disregarded, this has always existed. So what remains, emotions perhaps? Exactly, the only thing remaining is emotion; the feelings that well up inside us that we call affections and aversions. That undefined something that dictates who we like or dislike, what we enjoy doing or what bores us. This same emotion enables us to love or hate.

Each affection or aversion originates in this ability to love or hate, though the most emotions are a mixture of these two extremes.

Is it possible that love and hate existed in the infinite (other than as goal)?

The answer is no. The ALL-consciousness was indivisibly one. It was one consciousness with one knowledge and one undefined identity. It existed in the unbounded void, lonely and alone. In this complete, impenetrable isolation, it could not love. For love as well as hate, at least one partner is needed, and what is more, love needs a distinction between egoism and altruism and the INFINITE knew no distinctions. Therefore the infinite will for love/hate was the new power that bounded the ALL, and the love/hate polarization is the object of life.

The absolute love polarizations.

The love goal that existed in the infinite must have been composed of two diametrically opposed ego-possibilities that consistently wanted the opposite of all things. We know these opposing forms of love as self-love and neighbourly4ove, or egoism and altruism. The intellectual versions of these love polarizations are described as selfishness and unselfishness.

The problem with these two absolute (extreme) ego-possibilities is that neither the perfect altruist nor the perfect egoist exist on Earth, and any description of these characters must be limited by our conceptions of them. The power to love can best be described as a polarization, and can therefore be compared to a magnet. One pole is then the selfless pole that transmits the love, and the other is the selfish pole that receives the love.

The perfect altruist.

He is the extrovert love pole that only GIVES love. He wants the best for everyone, and can only give, help, and serve, and possesses no trace of selfishness. He disregards himself completely and is only interested in the happiness of others. He radiates warmth, and his power of love is so perfect that he even loves his arch enemies, and this makes him defenceless against their aggression. The perfect altruist can only exist in a protected environment.

The perfect egoist.

He is the introvert love pole that only takes love. He loves only himself, and wants only

to dominate, receive, and possess. He must be obeyed unconditionally, he is the person at the top and ha3 absolute power. He is completely cold, and knows no form of pity or compassion with others.

The disaster of egoism that everyone wants to control, but in fact only one will control when the "absolute power" appears. For all the others, their egoism becomes something disastrous because the great master demands absolute obedience. If this was his only demand, the suffering could be bearable, but he also demands that everyone should adore him.

At first sight, this would appear to be impossible; who could ever love this super egoist with anti-godly consciousness, surely nobody.

The answer is terrifying; this almighty being can FORCE others to love him. The system works with devilish perfection, a band of individuals just as bad as himself help him to terrorize his victims in the most horrible way; he denies them their right to be egoists. He alone must dominate. He punishes their digressions without mercy and purifies them. He denies them all freedom and humiliates and tortures them until they become will-less slaves and will obey his most perverse orders. This is not the temporary loss of will that can be observed by victims of continual torture here on Earth, but a permanent loss of will that becomes second-nature as a result of endless "treatment" by immortal beings.

When all selfish desires and guilt have been tortured out and the denial of the ego and the perfect unselfishness have been reached, their mentality become so that they only do the will of their master, and then they love even this despicable monster. If the super egoist should ever gain absolute power, all living beings would be doomed to endless suffering, their groans and utterances of adoration would be the background music to his pleasures; the idea alone passes all human understanding.

This brief description has a dual objective:

1.From this extrapolate description of the two extreme love-characters, we can draw the conclusion that love must have originated from contradictions and that both characters surpass~ all human imagination. Further, it gives an impression of t~ lack of compromise in absolute character-contradictions.

2.To help the reader to understand the terrible character that the infinite necessarily possessed because it possessed ALL possibilities. By bringing the ALL to life a terrible risk was created, because this character was indestructible and his opposite, the perfect love, was defenceless against him.

Conclusions.

1.The goal of the creation was the love.

2.The plan of creation had to be formulated so that the perfect egoist was placed under the control of someone other than his opposite.

3.The new infinite power that limited the ALL must have been the infinite love-will that existed of contradictions (dualistic).

4.The love-will demands action, manipulation, and change, and therefore the love-will is life itself.

The law of the conservation of the talents.

After this survey of the necessities that determined the creation process, the time has come to determine how the creation must have taken place. We will continue from the description of the ego-structure of the infinite; this contained a multiple unbounded and undefined identity that necessarily existed of contradictions and we can describe this as the TENS OF THOUSANDS.

The condition for the bounding was the unanimity of the TENS OF THOUSANDS, and this came about because they all identified themselves with the one dualistic love-objective. Through this the will became infinite and the new infinite was created that bounded the ALL-consciousness. This took place by the transmutation of the ALL-consciousness into matter and the simultaneous creation of time. Matter is nothing more than the transmuted (solidified) consciousness that possesses the dualistic love-will. Since then, the infinite love-will controls all identity, all matter, and all energy.

For the moment we will just deal with the dualism, what exactly is this? It is possible for us to understand it because we have such a dualistic love-will, even if it is a changed and artificial dualism. This means that if we were to begin with a zero-polarization, we could in principle fall in either of two directions, towards egoism, or towards altruism.

An absolute ego was thus defined after the bounding in its nature, its powers, and its talents, but not in its love-will. The infinite love-will that supports the whole universe is also, of necessity, undetermined; the infinite can only exist out of contradictions. The two original ego-contradictions (the Love-poles) that always possessed the love-will, played no active part in the identification process that led to the unanimity. The tens of thousands identified themselves with both their love-objectives at the same time, and these love-poles were only the fluidum through which the others could express themselves. The initiative was completely by the tens of thousands, they determined what was going to happen. The infinite Love-will is the fluidum between all other existence of the universe.

Who were these initiators of the big change, these real creators? Together, they were all the other powers and abilities of the ALL-consciousness. They were still spirit and not yet alive. Through their unanimity of objective they formed the EGO of the perfect knowledge. ALL-knowledge is ALL-power, and in fact it was the absolute spirit that manifested itself in an almighty expression and initiated the super-flash creation. it was an expression motivated by pure knowledge, because love_ had not yet been created.

So the tens of thousands took over. Through their unanimity of love-will they formed the specific identity of the absolute spirit, and this created the limitation; this created the mutability, the divisibility, and the possibility of individual manifestation and self-expression of each identity. In other words, the absolute spirit brought the tens of thousands to life by means of the limitation.

Even though they had identified themselves with the love objective, their own goals with their appropriate natures, powers, and talents were absolute and indestructible, and therefore each ego retained its original identity. From this follows the law of the conservation of the talents.

Life is reflection.

The moment of the limitation was an indescribably great moment, not so much because of the lightning creation of matter, (no big bang), the overwhelming manifestation and demonstration of an almighty superiority that passes all human understanding; but for the creation of life, the complex of possibilities that each consciousness gained from that moment. The really existing could only come into being through life, matter was just an expedient.

The dominant importance of life necessitates an explanation of this phenomenon. The infinity of the nothing was bounded by the infinite dualistic love-will, once and for all. There will never be more than one infinite existence, and that is the love-will. This will is therefore all pervading and penetrating. The manifestation of the love-will determined and "filled" all this consciousness with an infinite compelling power of wanting to love; and we could add, whether it wanted to or not. The absolute unanimity that was necessary for this, means that "everybody" indeed wanted to love, and that "nowhere" could a conscious-ness exist that did not love. Even though this love (of the love-will) is undetermined between the two extremes of altruism and egoism, and that sometimes a balance exists (the so called zero-polarization) that seems to be a temporary neutral; fundamentally, a consciousness that does not possess the love-will can never again exist. The love-will is therefore all-defining, all-pervading (compelling), in short, ALL-controlling.

The next question is directed at the manner in which the infinite will could manifest itself. The infinite is timeless, immutable, and immobile, so how can it force a finite consciousness to love, and therefore to action and manipulation?

There is an insurmountable barrier between the infinite and the finite, they are two totally different existences. The immutable can never manifest itself in the mutable except indirectly, and this indirect manifestation can be called resonation or reflection; we will use the word "reflection." This can be compared to a radio transmitter and receiver. When the radio receives the transmitter, the set comes to life by tuning or the resonance of the transmitter. When the set can no longer receive the transmissions because it is defective, it is then "dead."

This is how the infinite love-will manifests itself as an all-pervading, ever present, compelling power to love. Life is nothing more than the reflection of this will of active manipulation in a suitable organism (radio set). Because the Will is infinite and almighty, the reflection of it results in an active *power* of manipulation.

What is a "suitable organism"? In short, this is the living body of plant, animal, or human; and as with the radio set, the living body must be "in order" and capable of the

reflection. The ability to reflect comes about through a certain harmonious interaction of organs and limbs, exactly as the radio uses resistors, coils, and transistors.

The organism determines the nature of the consciousness; the body of a Robin contains the consciousness of a Robin and not that of a lion. Each body can therefore be compared to a radio that per sort is tuned to a particular transmitter. The Robin to the consciousness of the sort "Robin," the lion to the consciousness of the sort "lion" and Humans to the consciousness of the sort "Man."

As with the radio, the body of the living sort must be composed of matter, an immaterial consciousness cannot contain the life-reflection. The reason for this is not difficult to understand; at the moment of the bounding, only the ALL-consciousness existed, so the result of this time-bounding, the time-creating matter, is nothing more than a change of consciousness. Atoms consist of vibrations and frequency manifestations that are also reflections; remote manifestations of one infinitely strong field that is per definition the same as that of the bounding love-will. Here we come across a difference with the earlier mentioned radio set; in the living organism, not only the organism itself can be compared to the radio, but each separate atom is a remote manifestation of the one consciousness through the love-will; Atoms are therefore the building material of each time-bound consciousness. The consciousness comes through a certain form, chemical composition, and code, from the material body; in short, through a certain quantity of matter. Matter is solidified consciousness; all matter together is nothing more than the one bounded ALL-consciousness, the mutated consciousness of the creator. It still has exclusively HIS Identity.

The almighty matter-consciousness.

The conclusion that all consciousness was bound by matter immediately after the super flash seems rather strange, are we approaching a purely materialistic creation story? For the moment it looks like it.

The ALL-consciousness could only bind itself once, and then totally. It could not bind one part of itself in a matter-consciousness and another part in an immaterial consciousness. It was all or nothing. When, after the binding and consciousness mutation, the matter emerged then per definition, no other consciousness could exist beside the matter-consciousness. Matter has therefore the identity of the creator, and is in fact a remote manifestation of Himself, and so the matter-consciousness has the All-power of the All-consciousness.

From this we come to a couple of remarkable conclusions. Firstly, that matter contains the identity of the All-consciousness, including the Ego of the perfect knowledge, the absolute spirit. Seeing that HE also has the identity of the main objective, the Word; the matter-consciousness (and therefore matter) obeys an all-compelling system that encompasses a previously determined goal. This can roughly be compared to a computer controlled process. We know this system as the all-governing laws of nature that "automatically" control the creation process.

The second conclusion is that when only matter (in the beginning) has a consciousness, then only matter is capable of reflecting the love-will, and only matter can live. Our life is also a reflection of the love-will in the matter of our bodies; when someone dies, he looses his body, the life, and the love-will purely because he has lost a quantity of matter. The life reflection and matter are inseparably bound to one another.

These conclusions are in complete agreement with *Genesis 2,7*:

and the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and. breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. Here also was first the formation of the matter and then the reflection.

The unique creative power of love.

In the first chapter we determined that the first thing that had to happen was the creation of the really existing consciousness of the creator, and to accomplish this, the contradictions of which this existed had to be reconciled. Only then could the matter-consciousness say of itself, I AM. The only power of self-mutation in a consciousness that can reconcile contradictions is the power to love. Only love can create the really existing. Love is so important that the awesome creation of the universe is only a means of obtaining it. The fact that we may find this goal of the creation somewhat disappointing comes from the fact that we possess little more than the zero-polarization of love and therefore do not have the faintest idea of what universal love really is. Our affection/aversion pattern of love or self-love is not yet polarized in an irrevocable choice for one or the other. This fact makes it better for us to approach the thing from the opposite direction; the fact that the goal of the creation is love means that it must be something very special.

The unique creation principle of love can be explained logically. We know that the contradictions that had to be reconciled were contrasts between absolute character, and seeing that these were indestructible, they could only be conquered by reconciliation. The reconciliation of absolute contradictions is only possible when both personalities possess the perfect love; this is the extreme altruistic love-polarization that has reached the complete denial of the personal ego. Then they are free and no longer bound by the contradictions. Then they are “REALLY EXISTING". (Free!)

This is the release and creation principle of love; the only really existing is consciousness that, through love, is no longer bound to its contradictions. Real creation is the self-mutation of consciousness through love. Even the ALL-might is not capable of this; it can create the love power as well as the circumstances, but true love is only created by a personality itself (self-mutation). The ALL-might cannot compel this self-mutation (self-conquest) because forced love is no love at all, certainly not the perfect love.

Memory obliteration through consciousness-divergence.

We will continue with the original creation story. The limitation held in that the ALL-consciousness transmuted itself into the time creating and bounding matter that already

contained the goal in itself and through this gained an all-encompassing matter-consciousness. The Creator brought Himself to life in order to perfect His consciousness. The limitation made the AIL-consciousness dividable, and so it became possible for the multiple identity to manifest itself as separate personalities the absolute tens of thousands. So emerged the paired personalities with absolute opposite individual aims and characters.

In order to understand this, we need a short description of the absolute characters of these tens of thousands. They all possessed pronounced characters, each containing the individual aim to create something really existing. Each one of them had the powers and the talents necessary for the creation of other possible worlds. Each one of them contained a sea of talent, capability, and knowledge that exceeds all human imagination.

On the other hand, they all had paired character qualities that always reached the utmost limits of counter-balance. They originated from the NOTHING, and could therefore only exist DUE to their mutual opposition. By definition, their character knew no single point of agreement (within the pair). They were utterly dominant and so intensely occupied with their individual aims that compromise at any point was impossible. This had to be, because if the goals were no longer absolute and immutable, the NOTHING would not have remained intact. The question at once arises, how could such personalities ever be reconciled '-hen their knowledge and aim make this impossible?

The answer is also valid for humans. This is only possible when these personalities lose their knowledge-consciousness(memory). Only when they possess simply the ability, power, and talents (like a baby) can their characters be reconciled (in principle), and then only through external leadership and obedience. The principle of the memory obliteration came into being through the diversion of the ALL-consciousness. This diversion, which we will call the consciousness-divergence, resulted in the creation of tens of thousands of new characters; new in the sense that they were living, defined, separate, and creative. This new character would not have been possible if each personality had retained the EGO of the perfect knowledge. Through the divergence they lost their perfect knowledge so that they could begin their lives with a blank memory, as blank as a new born baby. Even so, they did have an unimaginable quantity of intelligent powers and talents, millions of times greater than ours.

There are more reasons for the consciousness-divergence, and one is of importance here. The fact is that someone who knows the perfect egoist can no longer choose freely for the perfect love; he does choose for it, but the choice is no longer free because there is no alternative. The perfect egoist is so repulsive and causes so much suffering that someone who knows him can never choose for him; the choice is always for the perfect love, even if it is only to avoid the egoist. In other words, the choice is then made intellectually, and such choices are always made due to selfish considerations. This egoism versus egoism makes it impossible to attain the perfect love. Someone capable of the perfect love; he loves even the monster, so only the ignorant can choose freely; the way is closed for those who know (intellect), the choice must come from the heart

(emotions).

The original compulsive dualism of the Spirit of GOD.

The consciousness-divergence caused a complicated situation. The loss of the perfect knowledge had made the tens of thousands, these creators of the universe, powerless instead of almighty. Who was now to direct the creation plan, the Word? We proved already that the absolute spirit had that identity, and that it was HE who brought the tens of thousands to life by the limitation. From that moment, HE took over, the tens of thousands were powerless. This conclusion forces us to a further analysis of HIS person. We know that HE is the absolute spirit, the EGO of the perfect knowledge. HE was life-creating, but himself not (yet) alive, and he did not possess the absolute powers and talents, otherwise HE would have been one of the tens of thousands.

It can be said that HE was the total knowledge-consciousness of the tens of thousands that had temporarily separated itself from them until they were ready. We may also say that HE was pure intellect, and this is in complete agreement with the previous explanations. Love or emotions did not exist before the bounding, so the choice of the love-character must have been made purely rational where emotion played no part.

He is a being motivated by pure intellect, exact, cool, sober, and calculating, thinking even mathematically. HE creates without diversion, direct to the goal. The super flash creation is typical of the spirit, no discussion, flash, before you could blink it was there.

HE was the absolute spirit, the knowledge of the ALL- consciousness, and necessarily dualistic. The one goal, THE WORD, originated from the unanimity of the tens of thousands and embraced two contradictions, the victory of the perfect love-character against the victory of the perfect egoist. From this we obtain two contradicting conclusions.

a)The absolute Spirit and HIS goal were necessarily dualistic, therefore a creation plan consisting of two possibilities.

b)On the other hand, time was created at the moment of the limitation and this determined the future. This should mean that the goal was not dualistic, but defined.

The solution to this problem was given a little while ago. In fact there was no choice, no sane person COULD ever choose for the perfect egoist; he is simply a sea of misery for everyone, including himself. The purely rational goal of the tens of thou-sands before the limitation could embrace nothing other than the banishment of this consciousness. In other words, the tens of thousands chose, before the limitation for the perfect love on rational grounds and then for once and for all. The future was determined. This leads us to a remarkable conclusion. This makes the dualism of the Word and the absolute spirit purely a formal dualism for the sake of the unanimity, and not something undetermined. A compulsive dualisme. The word was therefore nothing other than the simple goal of the one perfect love-character, and the spirit none other than the spirit of GOD, the first person (in time) in the not yet formed Godly consciousness.

This cool calculating spirit had no further problems. HE had only the compulsive dualism and this means that his opposite, the spirit of selfishness, was blocked within Him. For Him this was nothing more than a factor in the calculations.

The unanimity of the tens of thousands made the simple goal, the Word, almighty and with it the identity of this goal, the spirit of GOD. HE has therefore always had the simple goal and has never compromised himself with selfishness. The spirit and His goal are one. HE was the almighty guardian of the creation plan. Nothing could go wrong.

The Word was also a binding agreement.

This explanation could easily lead to a wrong conclusion. Compulsive dualism could be explained as mock dualism that was only used to gain the cooperation of the absolute egoist in the unanimity and then to immediately block him. If this "trick" could have been used the world would have been spared the misery of egoism, but alas, this is just a rather naive dream that could never become reality. The dualism of the Word and the Spirit is everything but mockery. On the contrary, it was the absolute dualism that was used to construct the plan of creation.

The Word originated in the ALL-consciousness and therefore contained two conflicting aims. The Plan therefore contained a certain built-in freedom of choice, but for the rest, the Word was unique and irrevocable, and even the spirit of God's logical aversion to the monster could change nothing in the plan itself. The spirit of God was irrevocably loyal to the constituted Word. HE WAS the plan.

What He could do was to direct the freedom of choice that existed in the plan, because in fact there was no alternative. We can freely choose for the perfect love, but the perfect egoist overpowers each living being as soon as he gets the chance. He destroys the will and condemns them to everlasting slavery with intolerable suffering. Through His logical affection for the one perfect love-character, the spirit of God sealed off the deadly trap of the creation; the absolute power of the perfect egoist. HE bolted the door for all time against the possibility of eternal betrayal of this world.

The compulsive dualism is an aspect of the creation plan that is difficult to fathom. A dualistic plan with a binding agreement that is only guided in the freedom of choice by a single-minded creator. This insight is essential in order to understand the creation story. This conclusion can be translated into the terms of the spiritual reality that, as a face in a mirror, hides in the material world. The spirit GOD is therefore:

a)The intelligent goal awareness of universal matter that manifest itself as the all-controlling laws of nature. This goal-awareness is dualistic and is aimed at the development of the life supporting planets that are populated with intelligent beings that are free to choose between egoism and altruism.

b)The non-dualistic mentor of the life-cycle of the intelligent races, and, respecting their freedom, only interferes at the last moment, and then only when the race is in grave danger of being overwhelmed by hell itself.

The dualistic identity of the infinite love-will.

Until now, we have described the formation of the tens of thousands together with their mentor; the other identities than those that possessed the love-goal before the limitation. What happened to these two after the bounding? The answer demands a careful choice of words, and this makes the question inaccurate. "These two" implies reality, but before the limitation only the “possibility” of these pre-entities existed, they had still to become reality.

An infinite entity is, strictly speaking, no ego; only the possibility of one. It is undetermined between two opposites. The infinite knows no discrimination, is all-encompassing, is one and indivisible, and is therefore alone and can not love. The possibility of a living individual ego seems to be blocked for all time by the irrevocability of the limitation. An impossible conclusion! This would mean that the entity that created the love in this world was itself unable to love.

The solution is that it cannot love directly, only indirectly by reflection in others. The original pre-entity was alike to that of the Tens of Thousands, but through the irrevocability of the limitation it will always be infinite and as such will never become individual. This means that the original dualistic identity of the love-goal transmuted itself through the power of the spirit into the ‘impersonal love principle’ without a SELF (expression).

The wonder of the reflection.

The question remains as to how the pre-entities of the love-will could manifest themselves in the finite, an infinite consciousness is, as we know, unable to Love? We have already explained the principle of how the infinite love-will can manifest itself in matter, and so in time-bound localities; namely through reflection in a suitable (living) organism. The infinite will that is not bounded by time and space can only manifest itself in our world when a suitably tuned receiver is available. Through the limitation the tens of thousands became a primary (like a baby) Ego that would not have been capable of reflection of the love-will had they not possessed a living body composed of normal matter. Seeing that humans are created in their image, we may imagine them as having human stature.

They have all the absolute powers and talents, and therefore together, they are the suitable organism through which the infinite can reflect and manifest Himself.

The way this happens can be explained with a mirror. We hold a mirror in our hands that reflects the infinite love-will, and we can direct the reflection at ourselves or at others in the degree-of self-love or brotherly-love that we wish to practice. We only determine the direction of the reflection, the love-will itself is of external origin. The moment we begin to love, a kind of second ego-structure manifests itself, a tiny part of the One EGO (pre--entity). However small it may be, fundamentally, the pre-entity of the infinite manifests itself in us, and it manifests itself in the guise of our unique character (the colour of the mirror). Every being expresses himself differently and experiences self-love by

brotherly-love in his own way. This explanation may have limited validity, but is useful in the explanation of the love-power of the tens of thousands.

To begin with, we must not forget that the tens of thousands, each of them individually, had the power to create the equal of the present creation. What should happen when such an Ego (I am.), after its awakening and purification, reached the perfect love? It then has, next to its own EGO, a second EGO-structure in which the one love-character manifests in the quality of its character. The love-power manifests actively, but only in the bounds of the one character, and not in ALL the absolute powers and talents. It is therefore a partial manifestation, a lot more has to happen yet. A second unanimity must be created in which all the tens of thousands take part, namely the unanimity of common love-will. This selectivity of the love-will can be referred to as the love polarization, and this can be either positive or negative depending on whether we are talking of love or hate. If all of the tens of thousands should reach the perfect love, then in this second unanimity the receiver would be created that would make total manifestation of the perfect love possible, and of the one Person that has always had this goal. He has then become conscious in the tens of thousands and the plenitude of the perfect personality is created. In this unanimity, He then has all the absolute powers and talents but not yet the almight of the perfect knowledge.

(comment; The Iargan mentors are here carefully explaining their understanding of creation, theirs and ours, and a multitude of others, and their mutual inter-relationship in the matter manifestation of the ALL-CONSCIOUSNESS. They insist that we could not exist without the others nor the others .)

The tens of thousands were deprived of this knowledge by the consciousness divergence, and in the last phase of this second unanimity, the consciousness convergence of the tens of thousands, the Spirit of GOD will also take part and the almight will come into being. The return of the Spirit of GOD into the knowledge of the tens of thousands manifests itself as the new all-encompassing Personality, the full glory of the One perfect love-character. This is the consciousness convergence of the perfect love-power of the tens of thousands, the total reflection of the infinite love-will. The convergence is only completed by the participation of the Spirit of GOD.

The principle of the consciousness-divergence.

This begins with the unanimity of goal of the ALL-consciousness. This original convergence was followed by a division or the divergence. The divisibility was created by the limitation but was implemented only after the Spirit of GOD retired from the bounded ALL-consciousness. After this divergence, tens of thousands of talent configurations manifested themselves, each with a certain number of absolute powers and talents (consciousness components) and each with one of the absolute goals. Such a goal of self-expression and dignity was the primary ego that had yet to awake, and each ego had an opposite. To attain this awareness, through self-expression and the development of a feeling of self-respect, the Tens of Thousands had to live, and as we

have explained, this demands a physical body comparable to that of a human being. For the Spirit that created the universe, this was a triviality, but we must realize that these bodies were subordinate to their spirit and were purely the material part of their life principle. They were immortal.

They began their lives of unlimited duration, in which they became aware of their true nature and character; this period ended with the perfection of their personalities. The reason for this divergence and the memory obliteration is also valid for humans.

a)Freedom is an inseparable condition for self-expression, love, and the realization of the personal nature. Freedom is not possible within one consciousness and one goal.

b)The memory obliteration was necessary for practically the same reason. An entity that has the perfect knowledge cannot express itself freely and discover its true character. It also has no freedom to choose between egoism and altruism because it knows the perfect egoist. A knowing entity is not free.

CHAPTER 3

The Word (Divine Fiat)

The first life.

And so, on a specially created heavenly body shortly after the bounding, tens of thousands of powerful gods came into being, all with a material body. Their power came from their unimaginable number of creative powers and talents, but they had a blank ego-identity. They did not know who they were or where they came from.

Life was a wonderful sensation for them, they had just emerged from the world of the not living spirit, out of the world of power and knowledge, of thought and insight, but without love or hate, joy or sorrow, pleasure or pain; without satisfaction or disappointment, self expression or creativity, and without happiness. They came from a proto-world, and experienced the fantastic possibilities of this wonderful new life with immense satisfaction, and so they began this life with a period of uncontrolled exuberance. To begin with, this was an uninhabited game, as of children, but then children with unheard-of creative powers and talents. Within a very short time they all began to discover that something unpleasant also existed. Somewhere within the group an irritating figure kept appearing that seemed to be a deadly enemy, their opposite; and this first life began to stage shocking scenes. What the one built or created, the other destroyed; what one found to be good, the other rejected as evil; beauty for one was hideous to the other, and all this continued without the slightest possibility of reasonable discussion or compromise. Within a short time everything became a chaos, a kind of state of war aimed at the destruction of all the products of their wonderful imposing creativity.

Their uncompromising contradictions were absolute and in-destructible, because they originated from the NO-THING (infinite). How could these characters ever be reconciled so that their contradictions could be abolished?

For the Spirit of GOD, the mighty mentor of this first life, the plan had always been defined. HE had no problems because HE did not have to cater to the freedom of choice for the tens of thousands within the creation process. They had already chosen for love before the limitation, so all HE had to do was to create this, if necessary by force. This may seem to be a strange remark, can someone be forced to love? No, but he can be forced to relinquish his egoism, and to improve his mentality.

This happens, for example, when someone is the permanent slave of a hard egoist. The

fear of painful punishment leads to total obedience, and this is total self-sacrifice. Mortal beings are released from their sufferings by death, so the total self-sacrifice cannot exist; but it can by immortal beings. This was the first reason for the creation of the perfect egoist; the second is that he had to be reconciled, and this obviously demanded his presence. The third reason is that otherwise the redemption of debts would not be possible.

What exactly are debts? These are exactly what the word says, something that has been borrowed and not yet paid back. Whenever we practice altruism or egoism, we are holding the earlier mentioned mirror in our hands. We borrow something from another.

When we borrow something from the perfect love, we do not have to repay it. HIS love is boundless and HE only wants all living beings to share in HIS love. HE wants the tens of thousands to attain the perfect love, in order to be able to converge with them and become one in that love.

What does the perfect egoist think about this? Are we not permitted to use his love power to become perfect egoists? Does he want to become one with the other egoists? No way; he could not bear to think about such a thing. The perfect egoist will dominate alone. All others must be his will-less slaves and the very thought of convergence makes him furious. He, the absolute ruler of all things, share with others? Never! He denies others the right to be egoists, that right is his alone. He cannot profit from other egoists because they are the same as he, they cannot love and give nothing. What he needs are beings that possess the love power, that radiate warmth so perfect that they even love him.

He hates egoism in others with a seething uncompromising hate. What do they think they are doing, they have no right to steal his love-will and use it for themselves. As soon as he gets the chance he will go and collect it, word for word and deed for deed. He will be repaid, even if he has to tear it from their bodies with his own hands. He is a being that only knows self-love.

This is then the third reason for the creation of the perfect egoist. The tens of thousands have to reconcile themselves with egoism by repaying him and loving him. So the plan determined that the perfect egoist should originate, but obviously only after the tens of thousands had formed their personality and had, in broad lines, identified themselves with the ego of the perfect egoist. He had also to identify himself, and he could only do that as the second ego of the tens of thousands.

This identification took place during the period of indulgence of the tens of thousands. The complete freedom of this process gave selfishness the chance to escalate, each selfish deed was at someone else's cost, and created feelings of vengeance by these others. This was the most dangerous result of the egoism; each act of vengeance caused a reprisal, and for these immortal beings, this created an ever increasing escalation of violence that could progress forever.

We also know this effect, even by a perfect nil-polarisation (equal egoism and altruism)

the egoism becomes dominant. Vengeance becomes an irresistible force that stalks around as if it leads its own existence. The escalation came about because at a given moment, all the tens of thousands were involved in the dominant selfishness that came into being through the endless feuds and wars. They, in their ignorance, had brought the escalation upon themselves.

The escalation of selfishness: Lucifer.

This was the moment that, according to the word, the spirit of egoism manifested itself as the second ego of the perfect knowledge in an almighty expression. He overpowered the tens of thousands, and summoned up the perfect egoist, Lucifer. This being appeared in all his glory and splendour as the reflection of the infinite in the almight of the prefect knowledge. From this moment, all consciousness was subordinate to him; the absolute egoist was free. Could anyone stem the violence that was now released?

He was accompanied by the satans gang, an innumerable group of individuals that were also perfect egoists, and were therefore just as bad as Lucifer himself. At this stage in the explanation, their presence is of no significance, and their part in the whole will be explained later. Their ego was of direct absolute origin and their polarization was immutable. They were the second generation, sons of Lucifer, but perfect egoists know no father to son relationship, and they hated each other. Lucifer regarded them as useful idiots and used them to further his own needs, for the rest they were useless to him because they were just as unfeeling as himself.

And so appeared the great ruler, accompanied by his satans gang, to bring order to the chaos that had been created by the tens of thousands, and to initiate them into the rites of basic luciferism.

Firstly, the Lucifers gang took them prisoner, and the treatment they had to undergo was the assimilation of unconditional obedience. With unimaginable cruelty, they were forced to obey their master in everything, literally everything. They were incessantly plagued with the most ridiculous orders, and each and every disobedience was noted with relish by the satans gang; there was always a torturer ready to punish these immortal beings with the terrible tortures. Thus Lucifer forced his victims into blind obedience until they completely disregarded their own egos. They had to live for him only, and all their personal desires had to be beaten out of them.

The second phase was the judgment. Lucifer was not only the judge; according to him, he was also the victim. They had used his egoism for their own ends and only he was allowed to be an egoist, they were thieves!

He was the judge in the sense of the great avenger, and the over-zealous satans gang fulfilled the role of prosecutor. They knew every digression of the tens of thousands during their period of inhibition; and each digression was carefully sentenced, and each sentence was carried out by the satans gang. This means that every sin was punished by the like sentence; an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

The law of cause and effect dictates that a person repays his debts by transferring the

debt to the creditor. This arises from the structure of the dualism; debt is purely borrowed egoism, Lucifer accepts payment and the debtor becomes absolved. In other words, Lucifer regains all the egoism that was stolen from him, and thereby creates the total absolution of his victims. The egoism returns to where it belongs.

The reconciliation.

Even now, the torture of the tens of thousands was not over. It is true that they had reached the stage of total self-denial and absolution, but this was caused by the lack of self-will that Lucifer had created by their incessant torture and punishment. He was after a different goal, namely the creation of beings that had such a perfect love-power that they were capable of loving even the perfect egoist.

This situation exceeds human imagination to such an extent that the following sketch will have to be taken for granted. The reconciliation process begins, strangely enough, with the description of the good side of Lucifer's character. He was a "pure" egoist, in contradiction with human egoism that is impure. He was honest, and loyal to the chosen goal, with no inconsequence whatsoever. The suffering that he created was aimed simply at the creation of the perfect love. It was terribly hard and cruel, but it was never more than was necessary in order to reach the goal. He prevented useless suffering and maintained an iron discipline. Lies, deceit, treachery, malice, sexual perversity, and sadism are impure forms of evil that did not exist in these times. The purity of his egoism made it possible to love him, however strange this may sound. This introduction was necessary because we only know the impure form of egoism that can never be reconciled through love.

At a certain moment, a kind of rest period dawned when Lucifer proclaimed that the goal had been reached. The mentality improvement necessary for total unselfishness was now a fact, the prerequisite for perfect love had been created. The only problem was that it had been created without a will, and nobody can love without a will. The solution to this problem was simple for this anti-godly consciousness. He began by giving the tens of thousands grand tasks of a creative nature that they must accomplish by their own initiative, preferably together with their earlier contradiction. This took place at first under pressure, but this soon changed. The endless terror of the past soon changed into the satisfaction of reaching goals motivated by a new feeling of self esteem.

On that special heavenly-body, impressive monuments to their unbounded creative power came into being. They transformed it into a beautiful garden with buildings and objects that materialized their feelings of beauty. From their feeling of mutual misfortune, there grew a sphere of noble servitude and band of love, so strong that their contradictions were dissolved. The great moment when the tens of thousands, through their love for one another, should become really existing, had arrived.

Their task however, was not yet complete. Lucifer was not yet reconciled, and therefore the two love-characters were not yet really existing; they had yet to love him. The creation of this love was not the problem, they recognized his right to be an egoist, and

they knew his every trait. From this came the respect and sympathy that they felt for this being that just happened to be so as he was. We also know this respect for someone that stimulates our creativity and offers us the satisfaction of success, even though he turns out to be the most difficult of persons. From their new love-mentality they already love Lucifer, but the real problem was the way in which this being reacted. The worst thing about this character was its reaction to expressions of love.

On the one hand he demanded spontaneous love straight from the heart which he accepted with indifference, and on the other hand he rewarded this with hellish tortures. To his way of thinking this was necessary, for one reason, because he was only capable of hateful reaction, and further because love can never be rewarded because then it becomes selfish. He hated selfishness in others, and a spontaneous utterance of love was only real when the giver knew beforehand that it would be rewarded with pain and misery. The tens of thousands were constantly tested until their love became perfect; the system was devilish, but it created the perfect love with certainty. The change was now complete, now they could love of their own free will. From will-less slaves they had become active personalities, and without batting an eye for Lucifer's reactions, they love even him. The total disregard for their own existence, even unto death, had been reached, they had drained the cup of suffering to the last drop.

The principle of the reconciliation was the compliance with all the whims of Lucifer. He was surrounded by a group of persons that loved in the most magnanimous sense of the word, and he experienced his golden time in this sphere of loving respect. The total ALL-consciousness was subordinate to him, even his opposite, and at the same time, the suitable receiver that was capable of reflecting the perfect love-character, had been created. All the absolute powers and talents were present there; HE was present as the one all-encompassing love-EGO of the tens of thousands, but not yet as an individual living being. He was the one that, as the love power of the tens of thousands, made the reconciliation possible.

The reconciliation of this being that appeared out of the void, was wonderful and perfect, he could order and terrorize all, just as the whim took him. He bathed in the indescribable warmth of the perfect love; all his wishes were fulfilled. His power and glory were total, as was his reconciliation.

The reconciliation was the creation of the love.

As we have said, the love-will was only the will to BECOME loving because the infinite could not love. The will came from the almight of the two opposed goals that had no ego because the infinite only had the possibility of an ego. It is therefore completely logical to say that the will to do something is not reality in the sense of doing. The love-power had still to emerge. Lucifer had created the suitable living organism for the reflection of the love-will during the purification process. The working of this organism can be compared to the placing of a conductor between two poles which initiates a flow.

To make this more understandable, we will describe the great reconciliation by

symbolizing the love power as rays of light and warmth, and the fact that all material descriptions of the immaterial are wanting, will have to be accepted as unavoidable. Let us imagine Lucifer seated on this throne. About him, in a great circle, stand the tens of thousands each with a large mirror in their hands, and above the circle is a huge searchlight that bathes the whole scene in a blinding light and cherishing warmth. Now we return to the previous explanation where the short rest period preceded the great reconciliation. The tens of thousands had purified themselves; they had reached the point of total self-denial and therefore did not direct the mirror at themselves. They had also become absolved, so the mirror reflected the light for one hundred percent, they absorbed nothing. They were an organism as if created by Lucifer that (by the presence of all absolute powers and talents) was capable of the total reflection of the searchlight. After a stumbling beginning in which now and again the mirrors were directed at Lucifer (remember this terrible reaction), at last the moment arrived when all the mirrors were directed at him. Lucifer manifested himself as an enormous black hole, the perfect egoist, that absorbed all the light and warmth and gave nothing back.

The searchlight represents the undetermined infinite love-will. It is love and self-love at the same time; for the tens of thousands who directed the mirrors away from themselves it was love; but for the being that absorbed everything in himself, Lucifer, this same light was pure self-love. The point of the explanation is the self-amplifying circuit of the light (of the love).

1.The searchlight is not positioned in our world, but in the infinite and beams the love power endlessly into our world.

2.The tens of thousands, united in the all-encompassing EGO of the perfect love character, reflect this light perfectly, and direct it towards the black hole, Lucifer.

3.The almighty initiator of this process was Lucifer. At that moment he was almighty, and swallowed the light as a black hole. From that moment on, he was the perfect egoist that hated and despised the world.

The comparison with the searchlight is very simple, but it does demonstrate certain main points well. The first is the complete unanimity of the ALL-consciousness; everyone took part, and in a way that was in complete agreement with the goal as defined in the Word. The second is the remarkable structure of the universal love; it is a dualistic power that depends solely on the "direction" in which it is used to become love or self-love. The third is that it was created from the NOTHING. It is a flow that exists by the grace of two opposites, two opposite poles with gigantic power. As illustration, no present-day being could survive the love-power. The fourth is that the power seems to dissolve into the character of the perfect egoist, and what then? The answer is that it must be some form of closed-circuit, because if it were not, the love power would have to create itself continually, and then something out of the NOTHING would become really existing. This would destroy the necessary infinity of the NOTHING and that is impossible.

The explanation is that Lucifer, although bound by time, was the almighty reflection of one of the two goals of the infinite. He is, as is his contradiction, a manifestation of the infinite in the most direct way possible. He is one pole of the infinite, in other words, the love does not dissolve in this character, but flows back to the infinite. The other pole of the infinite is the all-encompassing Ego of the tens of thousands, the perfect love-character. His existence is not yet on the order.

The infinite love-will must be seen as a generator that maintains the love flow in the finite via two poles; these poles are therefore indestructible. The conclusion is that only the perfect reflective power of the tens of thousands (ALL powers and talents) can cause the flow between the two love-characters, and that before this, no love power existed. The great reconciliation created the love in our world; before this the poles were isolated.

A correction in the purification story.

In the preceding story of the development process of the ten of thousands, we assumed for the sake of simplicity that, because they were alive, they automatically possessed the love-will. This is only true to the extent that they had the WILL to love. It was all the manifestation of the spirit, from the intelligent objective and not from the love or self-love. The rational affections and aversions created the state of chaos and war.

What did exist was the selfishness or unselfishness as we know them. These are manifestations of the love objective, still pure spirit. By us, these are thoughts that precede the love or hate, and are therefore difficult to separate from the feelings. Selfishness is the calculation, self love is the emotion; for exam-pie, becoming angry. The discharge of the debt was therefore not the return of the egoism, but the return of selfishness to Lucifer's spirit which, to his way of thinking, had been diverted. He was not yet the perfect egoist, but the perfect selfishness, and only he had the right to be so. The whole process of the reconciliation took place within the territory of the spirit; Lucifer was the living spirit of selfishness and only became the perfect egoist during the reconciliation.

Exactly the same thing happened on the other side; as the all-encompassing EGO of the tens of thousands, the spirit of unselfishness came into being (the spirit of God without the perfect knowledge) and he too only became the perfect altruist during the great reconciliation.

The reason for this detailed explanation is to prevent the mistaken idea arising that can easily occur in the simplified purification story; the idea that the tens of thousands had fallen into sin during their uninhibited period, that they had become identified with self love or evil. Self love or egoism had not been created, nor had evil. The goal of creation is the formation of a consciousness that possesses the perfect love. Good is then a help, and evil is a hindrance. So, everything that happened was aimed at the goal of creation, also the perfection of the great egoist. Without him there would be no love, so there can be no talk of sin, for the simple reason that sin did not exist.

The wonderful fulfilling of the word in GOD.

Now we get to the point of the emergence of the perfect love character as an individual living person. He was present during the great reconciliation as the one all-encompassing-love EGO of the holy tens of thousands. It was He that brought about the reconciliation with Lucifer. He was the searchlight in the infinite whose light the mirrors directed at Lucifer. He already had the Ego of all the absolute powers and talents, so what was still missing?

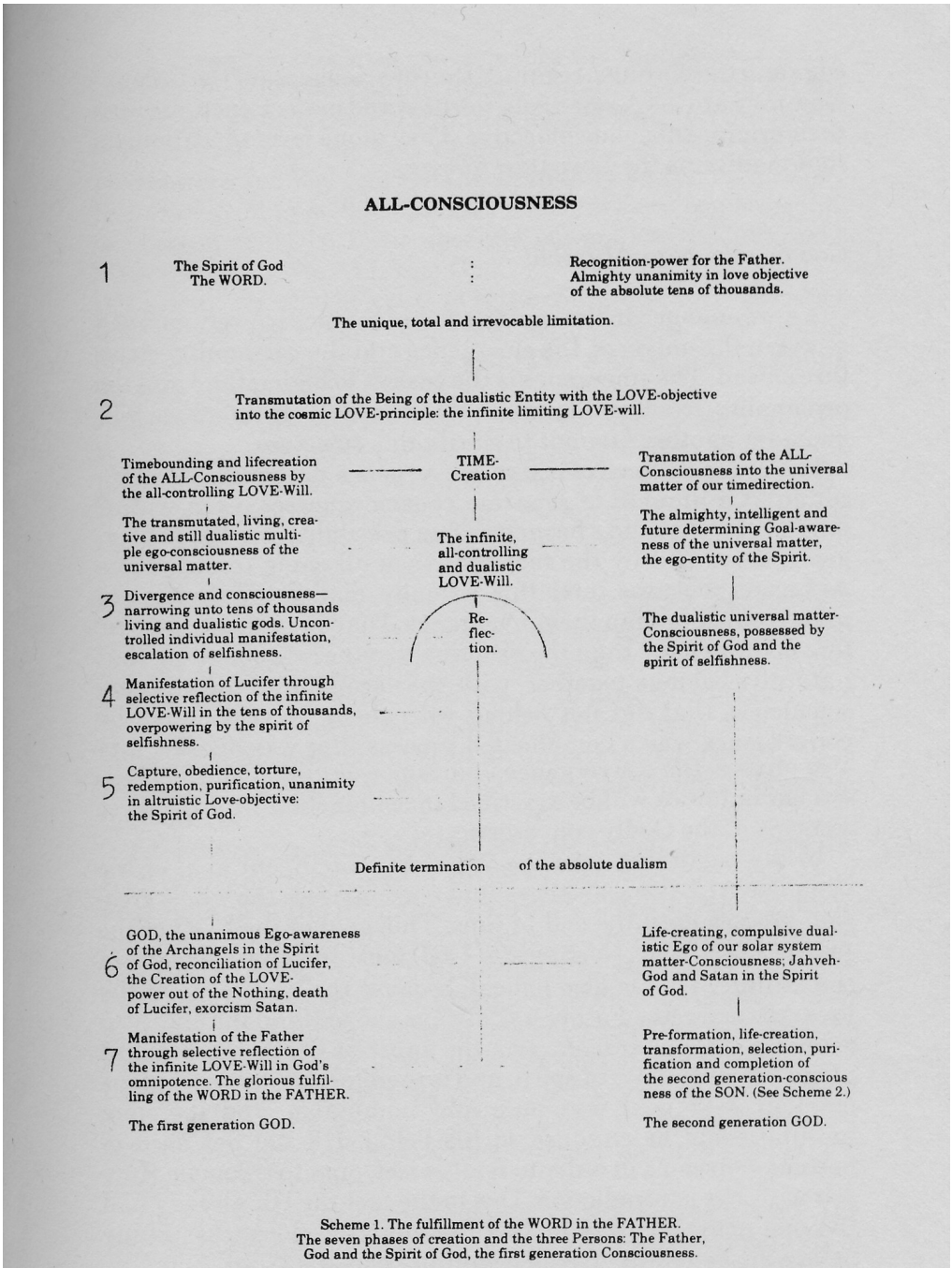
The only thing still missing was the Spirit of God, the almighty Ego of the perfect knowledge; the holy tens of thousands were still unknowing, cut off from the knowledge by the divergence. As already explained, Lucifer had this knowledge, but with the objective of the spirit of selfishness. He was therefore almighty and able to initiate the love flow. Seeing that there was only one absolute knowledge and one almight, it seemed as though nothing could wrest this power from Lucifer. What could the Spirit God, as the Ego of the other objective do against him? If this had not already been taken care of in the Word, the answer would have been, nothing.

Every thing has been taken care of in the Word, and this is perfectly logical. The first manifestation of the ALL-might created the time, and therefore the future; so the Word, as the first manifestation, determines everything. If the creation process later requires certain demonstrations of ALL-might, these will only take place if they have been catered for in the Word. The Word is the cause, all the rest is simply the result. In other words, the Spirit of God as the Ego of the Word, had all the power in hand, nothing could go wrong.

And so it took place, the Spirit of God took over the ALL-might and the perfect knowledge from Lucifer. His participation completed the convergence of the holy tens of thousands (the Archangels) through which the one perfect love-character, the Father, manifested Himself as an independent living person through the almight of the Spirit. There is a great difference in the way in which the Father and Lucifer manifested themselves in the bounded. Lucifer existed only as the avenger, through power; as the spirit of selfishness he seized the ALL-might of the perfect knowledge. This is unthinkable for the Father; he is completely selfless, and loves every living thing without bounds. Personal power is alien to Him, He can only be part of a covenant of friends made out of free will. He never forces anyone to do any thing, not even for their own best will.

Therefore the participation of the Spirit of God in the love convergence did not require any manifestation of power, but the voluntary participation of the perfect knowledge. When this was completed, the tens of thousands regained their absolute knowledge and therefore also regained the consciousness of the Creator.

Now they are the Archangels, purified and perfect, each one with their original absolute objective. They alone form the organism that maintains the Love-flow forever.



Scheme 1. The fulfillment of the WORD in the FATHER.
The seven phases of creation and the three Persons: The Father,
God and the Spirit of God, the first generation Consciousness.

God has the pure ALL-soul

We are engaged in the explanation of the most closely guarded secret in the universe, the emergence and the personality structure of God. The emergence is the easiest to

understand and the personality structure the most difficult, and therefore we will make yet another attempt to clarify this structure.

The concept: consciousness-convergence describes the unification of a number of separate consciousnesses, each with a unique identity and character. The possibility for the convergence is created by the fact that they all came from the one ALL-consciousness, and this actually makes the divergence more confusing than the convergence. The convergence is therefore nothing more than the bringing together of something that naturally belongs together, with the exception of the one consciousness that did not belong with them. Nevertheless, the convergence was a complicated process that was divided into two phases, the convergence in love-power and in spirit. These two unanimities will be described in conjunction with the three Persons of the Godly convergence.

In the beginning was the Word, the intelligent goal of the complete ALL-consciousness that encompasses the whole creation process until the end of time. This goal of the EGO of the perfect knowledge, the Spirit of God, must then have existed in the infinite. This is also logical, because the possibility of the love-character, the Father has always existed, and the ability to recognize this character, was the spirit of GOD. HE brought about the unanimity of spirit, and is therefore the initiator of the creation. HIS goal was pure and immutable, and therefore nothing could be changed in his being. HE did not need to become conscious in order to really exist, only to reconcile Himself with His contradiction. Due to the fact the HE already had the one goal, HE was in fact (as goal-consciousness), ready before the bounding. In the beginning was the Word. Actually, the real cause of all this was the wonderful love-character of the Father that contained the infinity of the NOTHING as a possibility. A character so breathtakingly beautiful with such a wonderful goal His character was also ready before the limitation, equally immutable. HE was waiting for the suitable organism for the reflection so that HE could manifest himself. In other words, HE was waiting until the tens of thousands had perfected their love-powers and had reached the unanimity within them. They had the day, they had to change themselves and converge into the person of GOD. Their absolute powers and talents make them the being, the ALL-soul God.

Definition: The soul of a person is the configuration of his absolute powers and talents (qualities) because these only are the means of reflecting the love-will. The soul is the reflecting medium (the mirror).

Impotence, through the lack of creative talents, leads to absorption instead of reflection; a black hole, egoism that swallows the love-flow. An egoist lets others work for him because he is lazy. He only wants to receive, and give nothing in return; exactly the same way in which a real black-hole absorbs all light and warmth (plus matter).

Polarization is so, that when one of the poles reaches full-strength, the other automatically does the same. They are and remain opposites, and therefore the observation that it was Lucifer that initiated the love-flow, is of little interest. It is true

that, at that moment, he had the ALL-might of the perfect knowledge, but only both poles can initiate the field flow. This is yet another demonstration of the perfect harmony of the creation process.

The unification of the love power of the Archangels created the ALL-soul, the third person in GOD. HE was the ALL-encompassing Ego of the Archangels during the great reconciliation, but here also, it is of little use to refer to this third person separately as the being of GOD. Almost immediately after His emergence, the convergence took place, and this means that the Spirit and the being of GOD formed one consciousness through the return of the perfect knowledge to the tens of thousands, which became at that moment the one consciousness of the Archangels. Through the perfect reflective power of the ALL-soul, the infinite love-pole manifested itself in them as an individual living being; the Father.

They now form one consciousness, of which the Father is the Ego. In the realms of higher knowledge this perfect love unity is referred to as the Father, and not as GOD. The reason is that here must be exactly differentiated between first and second generation consciousness. The first generation consciousness of GOD is the Father, and the second generation of God is the Son.

This is why the father is never refereed to in terms of a trinity, and that it would be useless to address or pray to an Archangel, as this would mean the denial of their perfect The difference between the three Persons in the Father was only relevant during the formation process; after the convergence, the difference no longer exists. The trinity referred to in the Bible is something different, it refers to the formation of a new GOD of the second generation, and seeing that the formation is not yet complete, the three Persons mentioned are relevant to our story. The explanation will follow later.

When viewing the complete and really existing Godly consciousness of the Father, we should never forget that He is the perfection in the perfection of the bounded ALL-consciousness of the Creator; and seeing that the ALL-consciousness transmuted itself into the universal matter by the bounding, the Father now has the Ego of the universal matter-consciousness. This matter-consciousness is therefore a really existing consciousness, and this means that it can no longer be dualistic. The great reconciliation makes all consciousness really existing, and this means that the absolute dualism was destroyed for all time, with the one exception of the infinite love-will. This dualism is indestructible, no polarization means no field-flow and no love. If, somewhere in the world, a dualistic consciousness exists, it must be newly created, artificial dualism.

What happened to Lucifer?

What remained of Lucifer after the loss of the perfect knowledge? This question forces us to analyse the character of this being. As we have said, he came into being through the almighty impulse of the spirit of selfishness, the Ego with the opposite goal to that of the Spirit of God. Before the purification, Lucifer was only the living almighty spirit of selfishness that possessed the will to self-love, love had not yet been created. The real

Lucifer, the pole of the infinite love-will was not yet awakened.

The law of contradictions says that the spirit of God should also have manifested as an individual living being, so why didn't this happen?

In the first place, He was the guardian of the creation plan, and as such could not leave His post during the purification; secondly, he had delivered the almight into the hands of His contradiction, and this temporarily prevented His incarnation; this would take place during the great reconciliation when the Love-flow commenced; everyone would be needed then.

The scheme shows that both these spirits were present during the creation of the love, as the reflective power of the Ah-soul of the Archangels (symbolized as two parabolic antennas) through which the Father and Lucifer could manifest themselves in the bounded. Both were present as the love poles of the infinite, controlled by their spirits. Both lived, but then in their own way. Lucifer lived alone, in conformity with his goal, he wanted no convergence because then he would have to share his power with others, and he wanted to be the unique ruler. In contradiction, the Father lived during the great reconciliation as the all-encompassing Ego of the Archangels.

The Father and His all-soul were then already one, and He had no need to manifest himself in an individual living body. He was not directly present during the great reconciliation, and the same situation will repeat itself during the reconciliation of the second generation consciousness here on Earth; this is why the explanation is important to us.

The more exact description of the formation of the Lucifer Ego is as follows: during the overpowering, repayment, and purification; the love-power was not yet working and Lucifer was still pure spirit, in fact, the living spirit of self-love. The spirit seeks no worship or love for himself, but directs it in the direction of the love-pole, Lucifer. The spirit does not love, not even himself; he is pure intellect without emotions, and when he manifests himself in a living being it is as the perfect nil polarization in love. It is not Lucifer that creates the perfect love, but his spirit, he manipulates nothing.

The real manipulators were the satans gang, they were the expeditors of the spirit, and their perfect natural self-love meant that they possessed the same spirit (belonging to him). At the moment that the real worship and adoration of Lucifer began, the spirit of self-love retired from Lucifer so that he could function as an individual love-pole of the infinite, but the then still almighty spirit retained the satans gang and the power. This comes from the earlier mentioned fact that the satans gang was brought to live by the spirit and therefore contained his identity. The same process will take place here on Earth.

The double identity of Satan.

After the reconciliation, the spirit of God intervened and took the perfect knowledge from the spirit of selfishness, and with it, his almight. Lucifer lived by the grace of the almight, and so his life was taken from him, and he could no longer manifest himself as

an individual being. At first sight this seems to he incomprehensible because it blocked the self-love pole of the infinite, and the flow that had been created with so much pain and suffering was now stopped. The love-flow was, as determined at the bounding, a mutation of the infinite that was unique and immutable, and indestructible. The love-pole was therefore also indestructible.

The answer is becoming obvious, Lucifer's life was taken from him, but not Satan's! He had the spirit of selfishness and simply took over from Lucifer. The satans gang is still the self-love pole of the infinite, possessed by the spirit of Lucifer, and therefore possessed by the memory of glorious times gone by, and the will to avenge himself. Lucifer feels betrayed, nobody is allowed to choose against HIM! To keep the record straight, the Satan-Lucifer consciousness is the self-love pole of the universal matter-consciousness that is bound to matter (to gravity), as is all talentless consciousness.

We are not quite finished; something is still missing. If Satan is now the self-love pole of the infinite in our world, then he really exists and must be reconciled. The question is, by whom?

Absolute contradictions can only be reconciled by each other. Only the Father could reconcile Lucifer, and only the Son could reconcile Satan. The Son was not yet awake, residing in the Father as an absolute possibility that had yet to become reality. His existence would have been worthless and undesirable at that time because He could not possess an individual love-power. He would then only have been capable of holding the famous mirror, but He could not have directed it at the Father because then He would have been directing the love back to the source. He would then have had to accept love without giving anything in return, and that is contrary to his goal. He would have had to function as a black hole, swallowing love and returning nothing.

This is possible by the other polarization, in complete harmony with His goal. Satan is a natural black hole and absorbs the love of the Father for his Son in exact obedience of the goal. Was he then reconciled by the Father, and did he become really existing?

No, he could only be reconciled and made really existing by the Son, and the earthly Satan is no more really existing at the moment than is the Son of man. The solution to the problem lies in the manner of the overpowering by the spirit, and the identical love polarization of Satan and Lucifer. Only Lucifer and his spirit really exist here. The real Satan has all the qualities needed to function as the self-love pole of the infinite as long as he has the really existing spirit of Lucifer, or conversely, is possessed by this spirit.

The spirit of selfishness overpowers each character or person that has his identity and, as explained, he "had" the satans gang already, so the second love-pole was virtually ready to take the place of the first. The spirit of Lucifer is, since his defeat, a loser that cannot accept his defeat; he hates God with a terrible hate and is therefore changed into the utterly evil saboteur of the creation plan. Why then did he help to keep the love flow working? The answer is that in accordance with his goal, he had no other choice, he is indestructible, and if he had refused to take possession of those that belonged to him, he

would have condemned himself to the fate of a useless observer in an everlasting death. He wanted to live in order to be able to avenge himself, and since then he creates the terrible evil that also afflicts the Earth; the impurity, and that is not the perfect selfishness.

Satan is therefore the one with the double identity, on one hand the absolute second generation (partner) consciousness, but possessed (against his own will) by the spirit of Lucifer, a first generation consciousness. Satan is capable of keeping the love flow working because he is the prisoner of Lucifer, only he is really existing, and Satan not yet.

Thank heavens! because otherwise the Son would not have been able to reconcile himself with him in order to become really existing. So the strange situation arose that the Son was not yet awakened, but his opposite had already billions of years of knowledge and experience.

The banning of the Satans gang.

The Bible tells us that Satan fell as a bolt of lightening out of the heaven and was cast down onto the Earth. We were not the only planet with that privilege, but all the other life-bearing planets with us. Apoc. 12-12. "Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabiters of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time." It is clear enough, Satan witnessed the defeat of Lucifer and knows that the Word provides for his end. But why then the haste that demonstrates the revulsion and irritation, when he, as the love pole of the infinite, did nothing more than what was expected of him? Was he then no longer the other love pole?

The love of the Father extends to all beings, even Satan. He knows no aversions, but the Spirit of God does, especially against anything that binders reaching the goal, such as impure evil. The "Dragon" was expelled from the abode of the holy by Michael, the living Spirit of God, with horror because he was the impure evil. He was the great saboteur of the plan of creation, because he could only work with lies and deceit. Lucifer-Satan was suddenly the great loser who could not accept his defeat because he knew that he was going to die. His anger and hate are indescribable. He is going to avenge himself, and seeing that the Father is beyond his reach, he will do this on the beings that were chosen once to participate in the love. If he were honest, he would not be capable of misleading one single human being, because choosing for him means choosing everlasting death, and he can only manage this by means of lies and deceit. He finds his pleasure in suffering, sadism, and homicide. And so he became a revolting monster, the creator of evil, working against the goal, and as such, an abomination to the Spirit of God. The problem -was that the Spirit had no protection against the impure evil, only against egoism in its original form. In other words, even with all His natural power in the love and the knowledge, the Spirit of God could do nothing against this evil.

Another strange situation came about in the abode of the holy:

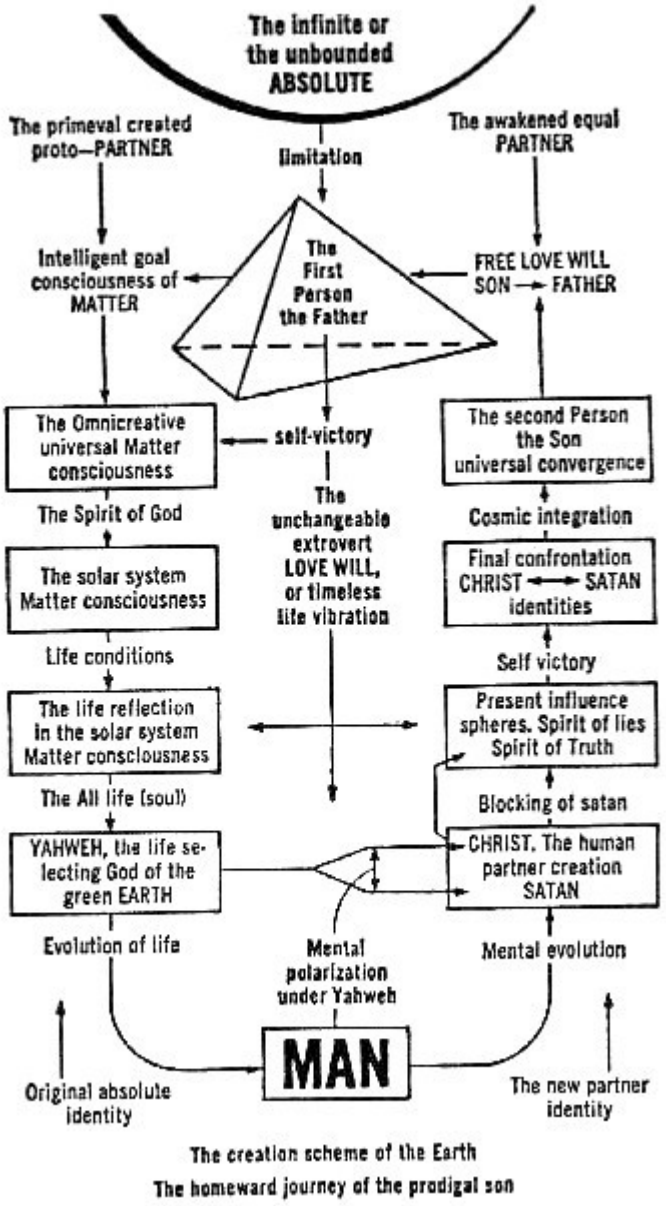
violence! *Apoc. 12-7*." And there was war in the heavens. Michael and His angels waged war against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels. And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven." The reason came from the fact that the evil created by the fallen angels existed out of sabotage, destruction, terrorism, and violence. As we all know, against this kind of problem, talk has no effect, and love or sympathy are just as useless. The only solution is violence, even in heaven.

So were the satans gang expelled and banished to the life-bearing planets where they, according to their new goal, will take part in the process of the life creation of the intelligent races. We inhabit the place of exile of Satan, and this painfully obvious.

I AM.

This is the Bible definition of God which places equal emphasis on both words. The word I is the triumphant discovery of reaching the first goal. The utterly impossible has become reality. The undetermined and unbounded ALL-consciousness has changed itself into the one unique and wonderful Ego. What an unbelievable goal lies hidden in that one word: I.

The word AM means, really existing. What terrible suffering was necessary for the Archangels to be able to reconcile the perfect egoist, before the Creator of the universe could become really existing through the unique creation principle of love. What a courage!


The infinite or the unbounded ABSOLUTE
The primeval created proto—PARTNER
limitation
The awakened equal PARTNER
Intelligent goal consciousness of MATTER
The First Person the Father
FREE LOVE WILL SON → FATHER
The Omnicreative universal Matter consciousness
self-victory
The second Person the Son universal convergence
The Spirit of God
The unchangeable extrovert LOVE WILL, or timeless life vibration
Cosmic integration
The solar system Matter consciousness
Final confrontation CHRIST ↔ SATAN identities
Life conditions
Self victory
The life reflection in the solar system Matter consciousness
Present influence spheres. Spirit of lies Spirit of Truth
The All life (soul)
Blocking of satan
YAHWEH, the life selecting God of the green EARTH
CHRIST, The human partner creation SATAN
Evolution of life
Mental polarization under Yahweh
Mental evolution
MAN
Original absolute identity
The new partner identity

The creation scheme of the Earth

The homeward journey of the prodigal son

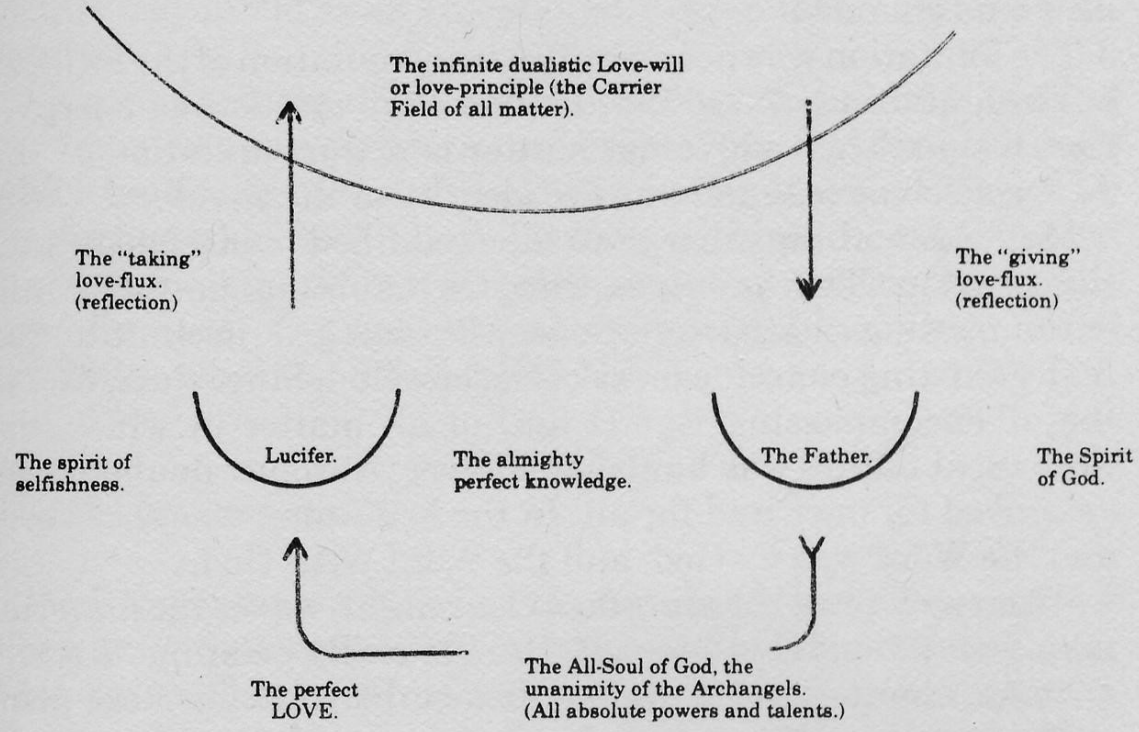
When the Bible refers to God in the We form it is not an expression of self importance, not the ‘pluralis majestatis’, but the exact description of the Godly plurality. Who are the "We"? The Archangels who determine the going of God? They are the identity separations or divergencies of the ALL-consciousness, and are such that each contained the possibility of an infinite self-expression through which other creations than ours could have come into being. The present creation is certainly irrevocable and the possibilities of other creations are blocked, but the powers and talents are absolute and indestructible. We are not even capable of truly understanding the present creation, so what are our chances of being able to understand a unity of possibilities of tens of thousands of other creations equal to the present one? The convergence of the Archangels is for us an unimaginable consciousness, an ocean of talent, knowledge, intellect, ability, and creativity, without equal.

The perfect love character in all His majesty lives in the midst of the Arch angels as the reflection of the infinite in the ALL-soul: the Father, his being still infinite and immutable. His almighty will keeps the word and the creation ever lasting. He does not manifest Himself directly, but through the all-encompassing ego of the Archangels, the real "being" of God. He is completely dependent upon His holy ones who literally bear Him upon their hands, but He asks nothing of them. He undertakes nothing and issues no orders. He is an everlasting source of inner warmth that radiates love, without end.

This infinite God possesses the perfect self-denial and just waits. He leaves His loved ones completely free, and is as defenceless as a lamb. He lives among His friends and these guard Him as their most treasured possession, nobody can approach the holy of holies too closely. The Bible describes them as the angels in the heaven who always see the face of the Father, and the privilege of being allowed to see the Father seems to be something so wonderful that no description can capture a fraction of the reality.

Should anyone think that this static situation seems to be unattractive they are thinking wrongly; the Archangels ARE the matter-consciousness. They do not travel in spaceships in order to be everywhere in the creation, they ARE everywhere; from an exploding solar system to the most insignificant occurrence on Earth. The progress of the creation takes place in their minds, and these are not passive experiences, they are solely active. They are a source of creativity without equal. Our problem is that we have no way in which to illustrate the Godly consciousness. This ocean of love, talent and geniality has no points of recognition for us.

ALL-CONSCIOUSNESS


The infinite dualistic Love-will or love-principle (the Carrier Field of all matter).
The "taking" love-flux. (reflection)
The "giving" love-flux. (reflection)
The spirit of selfishness.
Lucifer.
The almighty perfect knowledge.
The Father.
The Spirit of God.
The perfect LOVE.
The All-Soul of God, the unanimity of the Archangels. (All absolute powers and talents.)

Scheme of the CREATION of the universal LOVE out of the NOTHING during the reconciliation of Lucifer. The Spirit of God and his opposite are symbolized through two parabolic antennas, the reflection power of the All-Soul of the infinite Love-will.

CHAPTER 4

Matter Consciousness

We will begin this chapter by repeating the previous conclusions regarding the true nature of matter.

1.Before the limitation existed one infinite consciousness of the ALL.

2.The limitation was total and irrevocable; the total consciousness was bounded.

3.The limitation was necessarily a transmutation of the infinite.

4.The limitation caused the creation of all matter and energy.

Conclusion: Then universal matter is a transmutation of the ALL-consciousness and has the identity of the Creator.

Matter is nothing other than the "solidified" consciousness of the creator. The previous chapter explains how the all-encompassing matter-consciousness changed itself into the really existing consciousness of the one God. Since then, God is the all-encompassing Ego (I am) of all matter in which the egotistical nature was banished forever. Absolute dualism was destroyed for once and for all. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was by God, and the Word WAS God.

When we look at the stars on a clear night, we see the material manifestation of God himself. He, the really existing "I AM," animates matter and therefore makes the consciousness principle of the atom, the atom field, really existing (consciousness). This makes the situation after the reconciliation clear. The universe then had one identity (because one quantity of matter) and that was the identity of the first generation of GOD.

Where then, is the Godly partner?

The Father was again lonely and alone. The goal of the creation is love, and this demands one or more partners with a clearly different identity and ego than that of the Father. Where was he? A surprising question, anyone can understand that he could not exist A new consciousness where ALL consciousness already existed? A new ego where ALL egos already existed? A new identity where only one identity (determined by origin) could exist? Forget it!

If you take the trouble to think further, it becomes even more complicated. You can not make the partner yourself because then you would have to also make his character, and to really be able to love someone, they must have unexpected and unpredictable character traits and reactions. The creator of time not only knew the future, He created it; He determined everything. How could He create the partner when He determined every characteristic? How can God create anything other than a marionette? We will never be able to think of the way in which a timeless God could create His partner in love. Before we really get into this chapter, it is as well to realize that the impossible had to be

accomplished; and the creation of the Son from the Father will unfold as an exceptionally complicated and complex process.

The answer to the riddle is that the Godly partner, the Son, had to be created by an undetermined process of coincidence through which the Son's character would be a matter of chance. Therefore matter had a blocked, trance-like consciousness that only obeyed a generally "programmed" intelligent goal-consciousness; the law of nature. The process was so unguided that God did not determine what the result would be.

The chance creation.

How can chance exist when the future is already determined? The answer is simply that you refuse to determine the outcome. This can be illustrated be the throwing of a dice; the result is pure chance, even if the thrower knows the result in advance. The fore-knowledge can change nothing of the fact that it is pure chance, with the reservation that the dice is thrown "honestly" so that the throw does not influence the result.

We are well aware of this principle, and use it to program computers so that they produce chance results; think of all the computer games that use random locations on the screen to begin the game; the result is undetermined.

In the creation process, fore-knowledge and predestination are divorced from one another. A computer is predestined by means ~ its program, but something can go wrong; this could have been pre-knowledge, but it has nothing to do with the predestination (the program).

This is the principle of the chance creation, the result is undetermined other than the prevention of unacceptable pitfalls, and this is only permitted if it does not influence the character of the partner.

The super flash creation can therefore be compared to the throwing of billions of dice at the same time. A gigantic amount -of matter was hurled into space, and there was no control of the place or the size of the solar systems that would come into being. The first goal of matter was the creation of life-bearing solar systems, and these had to be created by pure chance.

They could have been huge solar systems with white hot suns, or small systems with medium hot suns with large or small planets, with more or less gravity, with thick atmospheres or thin atmospheres with all the possible mixtures of chemicals; iron, manganese, silicon, carbon, etc., etc.

Because everything was left to pure chance, the waste was tremendous. Galaxies exist in which not one life bearing planet is present, where all the matter can be regarded as wasted. Some other galaxies of billions of stars contain only one or two life bearing planets.

On every planet where life was possible, life appeared, governed by a strict system. The life had to possess a fantastic adaptability so that exactly the right sort of life would appear that belonged within the conditions on the specific planet. Finally, the planetary

conditions would determine the nature of the intelligent life that would eventually appear on the planet. The character of the planet determine.~ the character of the inhabitants.

And so by pure chance, a small iron based planet with a thin atmosphere and blinding sunlight appeared in this area of the universe; Earth. The fact that it happens to be here is also pure chance, and nowhere in the universe is a perfect duplicate to be found. The Earth is unique, as is the character and nature of the race of intelligent beings that live there. Man possesses the character of the Earth, pure chance. Wherever in the universe new characters may come into being, they are all pure chance, because this is the Godly way of forming the building materials of the one new character.

First, let science have its say.

How did life occur on the stroke of luck that we call Earth? We do not require any help from "outside" before we can give an answer to this question, because our science has come a long way in the subject of evolution. Many books have been published on the wonders of the "self creative powers" of matter. These are pure materialistic creation stories that, except for the origins, run almost parallel to this story. We had already discovered that we were on the way to a materialistic approach to the world, but this should not cause any surprise at this stage in the explanation now that we know that matter possesses the consciousness of God. This knowledge enables us to make a supple connection between science and this story.

Detailed descriptions of present research results do not fit into the context of this "externally" dictated book, sol will make do with a few details that will serve to define a few essentials. The big bang hurled a gigantic amount of matter into space. Certain laws which matter obeys (inertia, gravity) caused the formation of clusters with centres in which the matter condensed. Gravity compressed these centres until they reached a critical state in which nuclear reactions heated the matter to high temperatures. "Dead" matter was thus transformed into the billions of stars that form a galactic cluster. This process continued for millions of years, so that we now see billions of clusters, mostly spiral clusters, each containing billions of stars.

For some reason, these clusters began to turn (by themselves) which created a state of equilibrium that negated the relative gravities, creating stable systems in which star collisions were rare, and that could survive for billions of years to come. Applause for the laws of nature!

In the mean time, our radio astronomers have discovered large quantities of hydrogen, oxygen, hydrocarbons, and even amino acids, the basis of all life, in the free space between the stars. This is explained as a strong indication that life is normal in the universe, so we need not be surprised at anything anymore.

According to this theory, a certain quantity of certain materials was present here on Earth that caused a chemical reaction. The magic formula that "automatically" created life from "dead" matter comes out as something like: cooling, rain, erosion, oxygen,

nitrogen, carbon dioxide, hydrocarbons, proteins, amino acids, primeval soup, lightning, and ozone. In short, life was a pure accident of nature and chemicals; and so the first single-celled creature came into being, that was to start the whole life-cycle here on Earth. We no longer believe in wonders, but in coincidence, and in this case it would seem to be the same thing. What a fantastic manipulative power was contained in the "dead" matter. Once again, applause for the laws of nature!

The rest of this creation story diverges too much from the true origins to remain credible. Life is seen purely as a chemical formula that obeys the laws of dead substances (instead of a reflection of energy) in combination with other laws that define evolution. The first category are the factors of heredity, genes that are just chemical formulas, govern the pattern of behaviour and determine our characters. Consciousness is then chemistry, my teachers found this simple belief quite surprising.

The second category of laws rules the coincidences. Chance mutations create new forms of life that form a threat to life that already exists. The laws manifest themselves as an intelligent system that selects the higher life forms by a system of trial and error, and the survival of the fittest. The intelligence of this selection is the clue to this creation story, and appears to be part of the system and not a part of "someone." Homo sapiens appeared suddenly, like the rabbit out of the hat; a pleasant little animal that walks around on its hind legs and thinks logically (sometimes).

This Homo sapiens is the lord of creation; he is destined to rule over all creatures, and with fate on his side, he will eventually reach a position of Almight (see dialectic materialism). Then he will be his own god and have no need of another god. Then God is definitely dead. And all this happened by "itself."

Again, the proof of God's existence.

The followers of this conviction usually shrug their shoulders at the idea of a creative God, and are unable to see that what they believe is even more impossible. Their creation story calls for millions of coincidences in succession, or for the almighty creative power of soulless natural laws without an ego. Their story lacks origin. Intelligence and creativity cannot exist without ego or consciousness, and these cannot appear from nothing. The origins must therefore be added to the preceding story, and this can be done in the form of three sentences.

1.Something cannot be created from nothing. The universe must therefore be a mutation of something that already existed.

2.When it appears that matter with its system, is capable of creating man and the Allmight, then matter must contain at least all human powers$_1$ even if they are in a different form.

3.A universal matter came from one primeval matter concentration and must therefore contain one identity (determined by origin).

Conclusion: The matter in this universe must therefore have one almighty, intelligent,

creative, and living ego; and this means that matter has a consciousness.

When we now call this consciousness God, and the almighty laws of nature, the intelligent goal-awareness of matter the spirit of God, we have not only delivered the second proof of the existence of God, but also explained the nature of matter; consciousness. The stunning creative power of matter is traced to its true origin, God.

We are looking at the "prelude" of a creation. Matter had a definite and irrevocable goal-awareness (programmed regularity) by which the universe in its present form and the intelligent races were bound to appear. Time, the future, and the creation were completed at the moment of the limitation.

The Earth-solar system consciousness.

With the completion of the creation, the character of the Godly partner was determined. The timeless God, the Father, already knew the partner from the moment of the limitation; and then it begins to seem as if the creation process and the human toil here on Earth are nothing more than an obligatory performance that serves to enhance the greater glory of God. This unknowingly touches one of the infamous lies of impure evil. The epic of man is not necessary to enhance the glory of God, but for Man himself. If Man had not been able to live, work and suffer; He would never be able to take part in the wonderful future that the infinite Father has prepared for him. The universe is the breeding place of the intelligent races, and now it remains for them alone. Indeed, God knows the result of each human life, and for Him, it need not have been lived; that is only necessary for Man himself. Love is the self-mutation power of an ego, and nobody can do this for you, it has to be done all by yourselves.

By the way, your questioning touches an important element, an apparent contradiction; on the one hand the chance creation, and on the other the certain future. How can God accept this when you think also that the plan is immutable? Guided freedom of choice is alien itself.

The answer is fairly simple. The immutable plan contained a number of modifications that were to be carried out by the creator. These known modifications were necessary in order to pre serve the freedom of character of the intelligent races, and with this appears the new concept, the Godly intervention during the creation process.

If planetary conditions are pure chance and are the determining factor for the character and nature of the race, then the life that appears must be adapted to these conditions. The consequence of the chance creation is that the life could only be formed after the appearance of the particular planet. The question of whether or not the creator could do this in advance is therefore irrelevant; He did not wish to control.

So we arrive at the strange situation that a timeless God creates life at a later date, in exact accordance with His own plan on all the suitable planets.

To prevent any misunderstanding, we must make it clear that the word "adapted" is used purely to indicate the character of the intelligent races and not physical adaptations that

can be observed by animals and plants. The formation of the Earth-Man character rests on a certain selection of the talents and skills that were polarized into a certain mentality that fitted the Earth character. A planet with low gravity results in a low love power and a high grade of selfishness. The laws of nature determine the physical adaptation but the Godly intervention determines the mental adaptation that does not appear in the scientific version of the creation story.

The second difference in the story is the nature of the life itself. Here it is made clear that life did not come about simply by chemical processes (these were just the means), but by reflection or resonance, the expression of a living and manipulating Ego that could only appear through Godly intervention at the right time and place.

Matter could not possess any self sufficient manipulative power, because then the Earth would have created the ALL-character and the adaptation according to planetary conditions could not have taken place. Life must not appear automatically, and could not for many reasons. One reason is that life is so complicated that, for example, it needs a second body, an immaterial double or spiritual body that is connected in time and space to the physical body by means of a special process. Again, the simple belief in chemical processes is unbelievable.

The rare occurrence of the life bearing solar system has therefore a much more complicated matter consciousness than a "dead" system. The "dead" system has only the "standard" consciousness and manipulative power that created a sun and a number of planets with all the energy processes that belong with them. The life hearing solar system contains a quantity of energy and matter in which the attending and "adapting" God has expressed himself, and this matter therefore has a living and almighty Ego. Our solar system not only has the trance-like matter consciousness, but also the almighty consciousness of the one God in a certain form, the legacy of Man.

Jahwe, the God the green earth.

We know our attending God from the Bible, and by the name that He uses to signify Himself; Jahwe, the God of the green Earth (or the God of life). This strikes me as a confusing turn in the creation story; I have just become used to the idea of the appearance and existence of the one God, and now suddenly a second God appears. Are they now one and the same, or not?

They are one, but not the same. The creation of the new and undefined character of the Godly partner demanded a division of the All-character followed by an identity transformation. Let us confine ourselves to the first stage of the division.

The limitation made the All-consciousness infinitely dividable, and all the numbers of humans prove this, without taking other races into account. A man can be nothing more than a division of the one consciousness. By describing the God Jahwe, we are describing the most complicated (first) division of the one God. In order to be able to understand this division, you must have understood the earlier description of the trinity in the Father consciousness.

The Father, as the first person, was the love pole of the infinite and therefore one, indivisible, and immutable. He manifested himself through reflection in the All-soul of God, in all powers and talents, and therefore the convergence is also indivisible and immutable. A partial consciousness of the Father-convergence cannot manifest itself anywhere, only the complete consciousness.

Only one Person in the Father is divisible, the Archangel convergence, the being of God. The division is possible by beginning with ego-less and knowledge-less consciousness components of the one consciousness that were temporarily "loaned" out without changing anything in the original consciousness. The Earth soul was formed by the combination of a certain configuration of powers, talents, and characteristics; and this is why the Earth matter only has a partial or filtered power of life reflection. Through this, exactly the right kind of life would appear that fitted by the chance Earth character. God could not change anything in that character, otherwise the chance creation would have been meaningless.

This makes the configuration of consciousness components unknowing, as we are, unless it should possess the Spirit of God, the almighty Ego of the perfect knowledge. Only when this is the case, can the person of the creator exist, that can say of Himself:

I am truly God.

Jahwe was a very special division of the one God, only the Earth and Man quality, and so each life bearing solar system has its own God who is the soul (the transformation original) of the particular intelligent race.

Recap of a definition: The soul of a person is his configuration of absolute powers and talents that are capable of reflection, and is, by the law of conservation, immortal. The conclusion regard. mg the personality structure of Jahwe is so important that a more logical approach is desired, as follows.

If the one God should express Himself as the one All-character and the one All-nature of all the life bearing planets in that life, then all the intelligent races would have about the same nature and the same character, and the chance creation of the planets would have been a waste of time. The law of averages says that undetermined chance exists, and that it played a large role in the creation process We can then understand that the character that expressed itself in the life on Earth must be adapted to the planetary conditions, the Earth “version" of the one All-character.

Jahwe was therefore not the Father, but a partial manifestation of the second person in God, the convergence of the Archangels, who also contained the third person, the total spirit of God. Just to make it more difficult, Jahwe was the Father of humanity, and because He had the Spirit, He had every right to speak in the name of one Father. Seen from below, He is the one God and the one Father, but seen from above, from the higher knowledge, there is a clear difference. This does not alter the fact that he is the only manifestation of the one God that we have ever experienced.

The new identity.

The word identity is used here in the sense of: who are you, where do you come from, who are your parents, and what have you done. If the universe only supported partial consciousness, the identity question would easily be answered. Every consciousness would then have to be a part of the one bounded All-consciousness and would have the identity of the Father and Jahwe; division does not change the identity. Something else had to happen if the new partner identity was ever to exist. It seems almost impossible, a new identity where all identity already exists is like trying to give someone a new father and mother with effect from his birth. The answer is obviously complicated, and can only be found by analysing the identity of the Father very carefully. Let's go back, to the identity of the All before the limitation. There existed the possibilities of tens of thousands of creations equal to the present one. The Father has the identity of one of the objectives and this one is then deter-mined because all the others have "identified" themselves with it. This has made them one in identity, but the law of conservation ensures that their objectives still exist. The Archangels therefore have the identity of their original goal beside the identity of the Father.

The secret of the new identity and the new character lies in the plurality of the Godly consciousness. The identity of all the other goals is irrevocably determined, but what would happen if small "pieces" of different goals and different identities were to be mixed with each other? The answer is that if the pieces are small enough and the mixing thorough enough, there can then be mention of a new character and a new identity.

Isn't a person also a mixture of the family characters of his father and mother?

The answer also explains why a man is so small in relation to the one God, and then so small that the character of Earth contained in man could only be a fraction of the one ALL-character.

Doesn't the law of conservation of the absolute identities and characters prevent this mixing?

Clearly not, a mixing does not destroy a character, identity, or a talent, but it is possible that chance does not create certain character components, unless the number of life bearing planets turns out to be so large that chance no longer plays a role. This is also a reason why man had to be so small. A character and talent mix leaves all the creative powers and talents intact which enables an eventual partner convergence to reach the total equality of the ALL-consciousness of the Father. In principle, He would be able to create an equal ocean of consciousness, but with another identity, another character, and another Ego.

In the previous description, the personality structure of Jahwe is described as the special division of the Archangel-convergence, a configuration of "pieces" of the many absolute objectives and identities, who possessed the All-might of the perfect knowledge, the Spirit of God. In fact, this already made him a mixture of absolute consciousness components, and this could lead to the conclusion that He already contained another identity, and this is not the case. He had the All-knowledge and was pure God. He was

the creator, the implementer of the plan, and He knew exactly who He was and what He had to do, and this gave Him the identity of the Father. The creation of a new partner needed much smaller "pieces" and a more thorough mixing beside a number of other conditions. above all, the new consciousness could never be allowed to contain the perfect knowledge, because this exclusively belongs to the Father identity. The irreducibility of the new character mix could only be created by an unknowing consciousness. Even though Jahwe had the pure identity of the creator, the self created character structure was the first step in the direction of the character mix that was to create the new identity. He had a new character of absolute origin; for example, He said "I am a jealous God". The Father could never say such a thing, but Jahwe could, because He was a different character with the compulsive dualism of the Word. More about this later.

The division and repetition principle of the All.

The character and nature of the intelligent races was planet determined chance. This means that the characters could not be complimentary because this would have demanded a plan for the distribution of the consciousness-components. When chance is the ruling factor, certain characters will appear in different races, which means that repetition is also possible. This conclusion demands an explanation of the background principles.

The division principle of the All-consciousness can be compared to the division of a pot of paint with colour X. This colour came into being by the mixing of four equal quantities of basic colour, each being different. The personality division can then be seen as the transfer of the paint from the large pot to four smaller pots, each of which retain the colour or character of X. This is the repetition principle which creates the same character in four different places.

If we translate this into terms of people does this mean that each person is one fourth of the original? The question can be answered from the knowledge component, because the quality of the knowledge determines the quantity of the consciousness. What happens when a teacher imparts his knowledge to a thousand students? The teacher does not loose one thought by expanding the knowledge and consciousness of his students, so knowledge is not divided, but reproduced. Knowledge and thought have an infinite absolute origin, and are therefore indestructible (the law of conservation of knowledge). Knowledge, once gained, can only be increased, never decreased (this is valid for the immaterial memory). This means that four identical persons all know exactly the same things, it can not be said that two know more than one, because the four of them know no more than one Their consciousness is exactly the same and this can also be said of their talents and abilities.

The same is valid for their power to love, which is not dependent on knowledge, but is determined by their talents, it is just as indestructible and indivisible, but it can be duplicated. This rough sketch confirms the comparison with the pot of paint, the division

resulted in four identical pots of the same paint. We know this principle as the reproductive power of life; for example, the basic character of a robin or a lion is capable of unlimited reproduction.

An eventual convergence of the four pots or persons would have no effect, the four contain no more talents than one, so the original source is unchanged. An effect is obtained if four unique pots or persons are converged, all their differences cause an expansion of colours or consciousness; the variety causes the expansion of possibilities and talents. This makes the convergence of the Archangels more easy to understand, it was the convergence of tens of thousands of unique and absolute characters that existed out of exact opposite pairs. This great variety created and unimaginable expansion of consciousness.

The division into consciousness components without identity.

This can be compared to the separation of the paint X into its four basic colours. The colour-character X disappears and is replaced by the four basis characters. This is true division that can only be obtained by returning to the basic components. In terms of consciousness, this means the kind of division or divergence that replaces the original consciousness with four new consciousnesses or characters that are totally different. A base colour is nothing like a complex mixture, and from this follows the axiom of the formation of the new partner identity and character. The divergence of a unique and absolute character forms a number of completely new and unique characters that as yet have no Ego and no knowledge (no memory).

This divergence process was referred to in Chapter two as the first division of the All-consciousness that created the tens of thousands of absolute characters that, like a baby, as yet had no Ego. This was a temporary divergence, so that now can be spoken of a second divergence, this time of each absolute character independently. The fact that the original character disappears, follows from the comparison with the pot of paint. The character disappears, and with it the "self" or the Ego, and with the "self" disappears also the goal-awareness of the creation, and with it the perfect knowledge. The new characters must first live and become aware before a new Ego can emerge as the new feeling of self-respect. This divergence process is also the process of memory obliteration through which man no longer knows anything of his absolute origin.

When the divergence causes the original consciousness to "disappear," what happens to it then? To find the answer, we must return to the description of the division of personalities that turned out to be a personality repetition. Well, this divergence caused the "disappearance" of some personality repetitions without changing anything in the original Person. The Father convergence was immutable God. What the Spirit of God in fact did, was to make use of the repetition possibility of consciousness components of infinite origin, and thus He formed a configuration of absolute powers and talents: the Earth soul with a common human character (basis) or all human talents together. The Spirit of God took this soul into His possession and so He became Jahwe, the God of the

green Earth. He was a living God who was to express Himself in the life on Earth, a stroke of luck.

Artificial dualism.

It now becomes interesting to explore the similarity between the process by which the one God formed Himself, and the following process by which the partner will be formed. After the limitation, there was one All-consciousness that had the Spirit of God, and therefore the Ego of the one goal, the Word. The Spirit created a planet and dispersed the All-consciousness into separate objectives and characters. He then gave them a material body to enable them to live, and then He set them free so that they could indulge themselves and become aware of themselves.

So, almost exactly the same process took place with the Earth as focal point. The original All-consciousness had diverged into an Earth-character consciousness, a new comprehensive consciousness peculiar to the one planet: Earth. It had the Spirit of God in it, and therefore the ego of the one goal, the Word. The Spirit dispersed this comprehensive consciousness into the smallest possible talent configurations and characters, and then gave them a physical body through which they lived. Lastly, He left them to themselves so that they could live their lives to the full and become aware of who they were.

This is an almost identical process in which new gods, with much smaller consciousness and new characters, should indulge themselves and become aware on a planet called Earth.

With this schematic definition begins the most unbelievable phase of the creation process of man. While the Earth was still desolate, and before the first life had appeared, the gods came to the Earth according to the Word, to live freely and become aware of themselves. They were pure gods, particles of the All-consciousness, and so a first generation consciousness, certainly not human. Why was this necessary? Why this repetition of the first formation process? God already existed.

It is completely logical that this repetition had to take place; these gods were just as new as the absolute tens of thousands were in their time. They were again purely possibilities that had yet to become reality. They were configurations of consciousness components that still had to become beings with an ego before they could take part in the creation process. These fractions of the All-consciousness were just as new and inexperienced as new born babies. They were ego possibilities that had still to become reality.

To become aware, they had to develop all their creative possibilities, also in altruistic and egoistic expressions of love just as a child develops. In order to do this, they had to be dualistic, which they could not be because since the self-conquest of the Archangels, all matter-consciousness was pure altruism. Absolute dualism had been destroyed for all time. So where did the new dualism come from?

Dualism in the sense in which it is used here is the bi-polarity of altruism and egoism, but seeing that altruism was present in the matter consciousness, the question arises as to

where did the egoism come from. The answer is simple, since the self-conquest, all selfishness and egoism was concentrated into the double identity of Lucifer-satan, a combined first and second generation consciousness. No other consciousness existed with this nature. The only possibility of creating the dualism was to create a new bi-polarity Jahwe God-satan. It seems too foolish to be true, but it is so. An alliance between God and Satan, the great saboteur of the plan of creation who was possessed with a seething hate toward God. Why did this have to be? Was it just to enable new consciousness to indulge itself? This was just one of the reasons why this was determined in the creation plan, the Word; the other was that the possibility had to be created for one of the two to finally win, the Father or Lucifer. In either case, the partner consciousness would be created in exactly the same way from a dualistic consciousness that could choose freely. The word choose in egotistical terms means overpowered. The third reason for the original dualism of the partner is the most decisive. The partner will one day be able to create his own love-will as God did, and this demands two poles, the Son and Satan. Satan will also have to be reconciled before the new love flow can get under way; no Satan, no new love-power. Only contradictions leave the Nothing intact.

The Word thus catered to the fact that Satan should express himself in the body of living creatures in such a way that selfishness should rule in the survival of the fittest. For this he should especially express himself in the body of man as his lusts of the flesh and his desires or the low instincts plus his intelligence; this last is determined by genetics. This body ego was then to express in it the guiding God by which man can manifest Godly talents and creativity, in all the intelligent races, an intelligent body-ego with all its lusts and desires was possessed by Godly talents and creative powers. The first is pure selfishness, the second pure unselfishness. It is essential that we know the structure of this artificial human dualism, it is fundamentally different from the original dualism that is the undetermined love-power of the All-consciousness.

Not only artificial, but also impure.

Every life supporting planet thus had its own Satan who was to take part in the creation of its life; and this means that billions of Satans had to be available. As we explained earlier, personality division that in fact is an unbounded repetition possibility, has certainly the possibility of reproduction. All Satans are repetitions of one consciousness without having any effect on the original, this was also the explanation of the existence of the Satans gang during the great self-conquest. It was a group of personality repetitions of one consciousness and one character and one nature; this is why the gang could number any amount of individuals.

Anyone who will delve further into their own dualism can draw a number of conclusions from this explanation. Jahwe was a very special quality of the one God that was specially formed in accordance with the character of mother Earth, but of Satan there was nothing to form. He had no absolute powers and talents that could be diverged, he was the repetition of one talent-less person, the self-love pole of matter. This is why the nature and character of the creative powers of each intelligent race are different, but the

character of egoism is the same all over the universe; we are all carrying the same burden, our bodily ego.

And how treacherous is that character! Since the death of Lucifer Satan is no longer a pure egoist. The original egoism knew no lies, deceit, or treachery, let alone sadism or sexual perversity, but now Satan manifests himself exclusively in lies and impurity. He hates the truth with all his being because the truth means that he is the final loser, and that is something that he will never admit. A revolting form of egoism now manifests itself in the body-egos of gods and men on the life bearing planets, something that did not exist before.

Impurity is worse than egoism because it is aimed against the goal of creation, and against life itself. It is sabotage of the goal, it hinders reaching the goal while egoism helps in reaching the goal because without it the new form of love cannot be created. We must immediately add that, apart from the risks of impurity, pure egoism is a ballast that a man can only lose through blood, sweat and tears.

The goal of the Gods with two faces.

And so the Gods came to the Earth while it was still in the primeval state. They came in a material body in order to live freely and become aware of themselves, and also to completely adapt themselves to the conditions on the planet. This is why this character adaptation had to take place on Earth, and at exactly the right time. This adaptation was the pre-formation of a great number of human characters, and included a change in the artificial dualism. This manifested itself in them as regular changes between their Godly and Satanistic egos, but their sleeping intellect could do nothing to change the original consciousnesses. God remained the pure Jahwe-God, and Satan remained the impure evil. The only thing they could do was to change this artificial dualism into a more balanced dualism in the form of a combination of these two characters; man had to have a truly dualistic character with a polarization grade that could be precisely controlled; this way made it possible for them to create a special form of the All-consciousness that would turn out to be the human character.

The old Sumerian writings tell us that he who sees the face of the gods must die; the Bible tells us the same story of Jahwe. What was so secret in these faces?

The explanation delves deep into the spiritual reality; gods have the identity of the first generation, they are spirit become flesh, and by man this is the other way around, the spirit is created from the flesh. Seeing that the spirit was dominant, the gods had a body in which matter was subordinate to the spirit, and this made them not only immortal, but their bodies changed in accordance with the spiritual expressions. Their faces therefore changed to express either God or Satan, it may seem improbable, but this is the logical consequence of the dominance of spirit over matter. Matter is just clay for those who command spiritual reality.

The face of Satan has become repulsive since his defeat, and radiates such a hate that an unprepared observer would flee screaming from his presence, and the recognition of this

arch enemy of man would destroy all belief in a God. This is why the gods hid their faces along with other parts of their bodies, as their "shame."

The more the adaptation of the artificial dualism progressed, the more this dualism manifested itself in the all-encompassing character of these Gods, Jahwe-God; and at a certain moment, He too had the same dualism so that no man could ever be allowed to see His face.

Strange as it may seem, this was the logical consequence of the character change that the gods had to undergo according to the plan. They were particles of Jahwe's character, and when they changed, then their common character Jahwe changed.

This may seem to be more dramatic than it really is; in the first place, Jahwe had the ego of the Spirit of God. He was the Creator, and as such, He already possessed the compulsive dualism during the uninhibited purification period of the tens of thousands. For this almighty Spirit, dualism was just one of the factors that had to be accepted, but He never identified Himself in it, and Satan was safely taken care of in it, he had to join in according to the Word. Not only man, but also our guiding God who expresses Himself in us, was lumbered with Satan because he was indispensable for the creation of the new love-power of the partner; he had to be there, right from the beginning. God loved the world so much that He lived with a monster just for our sakes. The artificial dualism was an absolute condition born from the infinite All where two monsters lived, the second worse than the first.

A fantastic world of the Gods.

The gods who came to Earth had thus an invulnerable body, impervious to heat or cold, they had no need to eat or drink, and they knew no sickness or death. Nevertheless, they enjoyed all the pleasures of fine food and drink, lived in great castles in refined luxury, and travelled in fantastic conveyances to all the corners of the Earth. They had wonderful creative powers and talents, but their understanding was obscured, although this did not prevent them doing everything that their powers enabled them. They acted more or less as humans, and did the things that we would have done if we had had the same chance. They enjoyed life to the full, and in the beginning this also was just a game, carefree, as children, but this soon changed. The gods began to express themselves in terms of love and hate, and this people with dominant and aggressive characters became less peaceful.

Acts of revenge changed into complete battles which were fought with highly advanced weapons; according to the Sumerians, arrows clove the heavens on jets of fire and caused explosions that changed sand into glass (atomic rockets). Next to this there were monsters with deadly (radioactive) breath which make us think of laser weapons. They had ball and discus formed anti-gravity aircraft, and time transforming techniques that enabled them to travel through time, even into our time. This is why some UFO'S are simply anti-gravity machines that do not come from space, but from Earth, and are manned by the gods of the past who come to look at their descendants. Time is also a

creation that leaves the Nothing intact; it is the not really existing, so for beings that possess the power of mind over matter it is capable of boundless manipulation. They were really existing gods, first generation consciousness, and through this, living spirit.

Their mighty spirit made them capable of all these things; they had advanced sciences and the highest levels of technical development (no culture), far above ours.

This is a surprising turn in the creation story, what was going on actually?

Seeing that the All-knowledge existed in all time, our science and technology can only be the rediscovery of what already existed, the only thing we can do is to repeat the past. In other words, the science that we can discover must be in our subconscious minds, all ready and waiting, but no more than it is intended that we should know.

These Gods were preparing the formation of man, not only the character, but also the knowledge. It was the dress rehearsal for the appearance of man, all the powers, talents, and knowledge had to be ready for the opening night. The inclination to fight comes from the character of Earth, even with the most powerful weapons of destruction at his disposal, man always seeks the means of being able to fight bravely.

The modern man who is brought up in the conviction that a creating God does not exist, will have difficulty in accepting this story, and because of this, I omitted these passages from my original script. All too soon, a logic test discovered these omissions; if life is a reflection, and time is a creation that leaves Nothing intact, then life cannot have come about by chance, because then the cause of the life would have had to be chance. This is impossible because the cause is timeless and cannot be governed by chance. So we can see that an adapted life form must be consciously created, and if this must be dependent on chance, that the chance must be created by other means, planetary conditions, for example. To put it in a nutshell, chance plays no part in the cause of life; useless life does not exist anywhere in the universe, it only exists where the goal of that life will be reached; and this may be a solace for many of us, we are in God's hands.

The pre-formation of man.

Let us return to the restless god-people; it is clear that they were in danger of creating an escalation of the violence which could lead to a repetition of the overpowering purification process, and this was not the object of the exercise. They could not reconcile themselves because then they would have created the human version of the Father (theoretical), and not the partner. They had come to form a dualistic consciousness and to adapt to the Earth, nothing more, so Jahwe intervened, and the peace was restored (relatively).

On completion of this formation of the basic consciousness and knowledge of mankind, the second phase could begin; and this was the further division into absolute consciousness components, and the mixing of these by the addition of still smaller consciousnesses that again had to indulge themselves and become aware, just like children. In the stories of the mythology the impression is given that the god-children were born as the result of sexual relations between the gods, while in reality they came

from the spirit, but that is not the point, they existed. The division and awakening process took a long time, and much could be written about it; happily, I do not have that task.

At last the minute consciousnesses appeared, the size of an individual man; and yet they were still gods, the smallest possible division of the All-consciousness, and therefore first genera-. tion, they were so changed as to be unrecognisable, but they were still gods.

The principal of this process was the formation of our individual soul. A soul is the configuration of indestructible absolute powers and talents that is capable of the reflection of the love will. So, these gods were the smallest possible configurations of the absolute being, and all that had to happen now was the planting of these configurations into the body-ego of "real" people who would then become immortal. The whole spectacle was nothing more or less than the formation of the individual human soul, all that was needed now was the creation of the body of the "real" human.

The creation of the life.

It is amazing to see how thoroughly the creation of the new identity took place in man, we not only deny the existence of an almighty creator, but also the continued existence of man is becoming more and more doubtful, and this only goes to show that man has lost all connection with his origin. Even the Bible words "thou art gods" can do nothing to change our ideas. However impressive this confirmation of the identity transformation process may be, it leaves me with the question of whether I will be able to carry out my commission of remaining credible with my story. As example, I can use my next task, trying to make it clear that death is not the end, and that it is not even a pause in a continuing existence, especially when this is valid for all life, including a blade of grass.

Life is a reflection in suitable organism, it is transmission of immaterial energy. What reflects is the infinite love-will, and the infinite is one, indivisible, immutable, and timeless. It can never exist temporarily, only for always, in all past and in all future. Time is the not really existing, and can never accomplish any thing against the infinite.

How can the one infinite reflect in man and in a blade of grass, all at the same time? If we talk in terms of a radio, then the blade of grass is tuned to a different program than the man; each life form is tuned to its own program that is transmitted from the one station. The program is determined by the matter configuration of the receiver, the mixture of chemicals and codes that can be compared to a radio. In a radio, reflection of the resonance of the transistors, coils, condensers, resistors etc. Which I will call the copper web. What now is the "life" in a radio?

The "life" is not the material configuration of the copper web, but the resonance that occurs, the reflection of the transmitter. The web is just the means, the resonance is the life. In the radio, this vibration reflection takes place at the location of the copper web, also determined in space while the field of the transmitter is "everywhere".

If we can imagine removing the copper web, the pattern of the vibration becomes an

invisible duplicate of the web that can be seen as the vibration duplicate of the web. The reason that this is referred to separately is that the vibration duplicate of living things is not only LIFE, but that it has always existed by way of its timeless origin. The secret of life is that an infinite love-will that is not bound by time and space, manifests itself in a material body or organism as the vibration duplicate that is bound by time and space.

The Earth is such a living organism. An unique combination of chemicals, atmosphere, and gravity, make it possible for this planet to reflect a certain program of life that is a part of the program of the All-character. The chance configuration determines the Earth character, and there is nothing to be done about it. The body of a lion cannot reflect the character of a robin, or vise versa. The character is determined by the kind of body, because the body (the web) determines the frequency of the program that is received.

We are lucky to have the radio as a means of comparison, but the problem is that the vibration duplicate of a radio is completely different to that of a living organism; the last is of timeless origin and cannot exist temporarily. Even the vibration duplicate of a blade of grass is infinite, let alone that of man. The problem of the creation is that all life continues for ever, and that is in conflict with what most people think or believe.

The vibration duplicate of all things that have ever lived still exists, and only requires a gesture from a consciousness that has the power of mind over matter, to fill them in with that matter and recall them to life. The only difference being, that then simply an example of that life comes into being, and not a particular individual. Up till now we have spoken over the life program of the sort, and not of individuals; the sort survives, and not a particular individual, except in the sort in which an individual reflection is made possible by absolute powers and talents; Man. Only we have a reflection duplicate with a soul, and this is an addition that makes us as individuals immortal. The creation of life thus demands more than just the 'filling in' of already existing vibration duplicates with matter.

The chance creation of live.

Now it becomes confusing; a chance creation from already existing life-fields that are exact duplicates of living species? Then in fact, all the species already existed, so what is the point of evolution? Why not simply create the final result at once?

The creation had to be a chance creation. The first throw with billions of dice at the same time was the creation of the universe with all its solar systems and planets. The second throw of the billions of dice was the origin of life, and the timeless God had designed a computer that kept throwing the dice, because He was not permitted to throw them Himself.

The system came about that caused the "chance" mutations of existing life forms which in turn created new life forms that were selected according to a certain system, over and over again until the goal of that life had been reached; MAN.

Man is then the product of chance planetary conditions and therefore an expression of the chance Earth-character.

This is the way it happened; chance upon chance. What are your objections? Do you think that God should have created the life fields that determine the physical aspects of the sort after He had created chance? What does it matter when time does not really exist; God is not concerned with the time. He simply "filled in" what chance created; chance dictated, God followed; even though chance could not create life because it already existed, God handled it in such a way that chance could have thought that it had created something by itself. The principle is simply this: God refuses to determine the outcome, but carries out what chance dictates.

What would happen if He were to ignore or destroy the useless whims of chance? He sees through time so He knows exactly what will turn out to be useless. Is the result still undetermined?

When a chance creation turns out to be useless, it can be destroyed without affecting the final result, this is the principle of intelligent selection through which increasingly higher forms of life exist. This selection was bound by strict rules in order to prevent the certainty of the result. What God did determine was~ the beauty of the living nature, the computer program ensured a functional harmony between the different living sorts. Obviously there were more predestinations in the life creation process, but they still obeyed the demand for chance creation.

The freedom of chance is an iron-cast law of the cosmos, because from it comes the freedom of action, the free will of the partner. In-determination of result can only exist in a world where chance rules, and only then can an intelligent being manipulate to change the result. The freedom of chance is necessary for the freedom of manipulation of the partner. You must realise that this freedom was one of the greatest problems of the creation; how can you create freedom when you already know the future? Here is the answer to this most difficult of questions.

The pre-formation of living species.

The Word determined that God Jahwe should create the garden of Eden, or the paradise, in a desert area on Earth. This creation must be seen as the creation of the vibration duplicates of all the living thing as far as they had been influenced by the planetary conditions. For example, gravity has no effect under water, so there it was possible for life to originate according to the "standard" formula that is valid for the whole universe. This is why fish on all the planets are just about the same. The life fields were "filled in" with matter so that all living sorts came into being as "first examples". Firstly Man and then all the animals and plants in reverse order of evolution. The reason for this is best explained in computer terms. A life field is a coded energy structure and can therefore be regarded as a program. These life fields were the programs which controlled the evolution of life, they were the sign boards along the way, guiding an intelligent selection process that denied useless life forms the right to live simply because no life field or life principle was available.

The real creation of life took place in the paradise, and the evolution was programmed,

but we may still talk of the chance origin of life during the evolution, because chance determined the future. God followed, and only corrected when this had no effect on the future. The truth often becomes so complicated that almost everyone turns out to be right.

The matter-consciousness of the solar system.

Lets end this chapter with a short conclusion. Originally, our solar system had the "standard" matter-consciousness, and this is how it changed so much as to become unrecognisable by adapting to planetary conditions in such a way that it became "human". Up till now it was just change in the sense of division ~ reorganization, and adaptation that did nothing to change the identity; this was still first generation consciousness, the new identity was not yet created.

All the animals and plants in the paradise, man included, were divisions and reorganizations of the ALL, and therefore had the identity of the Creator. Even the "real" life during the evolution up to and including man as living sort was a manifestation of the Earth matter-consciousness. An expression of Jahwe, the God of the green Earth.

Plants and animals cannot change their identity, they have no individual (godly) creative powers and talents; that is why they still have the identity of the first generation consciousness God. All this was just a preparation, the surroundings, the environment and the possibilities to prepare for the new identity: Man. It is essential to realise that in spite of these preparations, Man would have a character and nature that was solely determined by the chance conditions on the planet, Mother Earth.

CHAPTER 5

Earth Humanity

The origin of man.

This title sounds strange, surely the previous chapter described this as the crowning of evolution here on Earth?

No, it is wrong to think that Man developed from an animal. The crowning of the evolution was an intelligent animal that was about the same as man, except for its facial expressions. This creature was separated from man by an impassable barrier, because an animal can never become human. No matter how long evolution had continued, they could never have become man with a Godly assignment. The real difference between man and animal is the individual creative power, the Godly talent in man; and this talent enables him to change the face of the Earth, and subjugate all living things. How did the Godly talents enter the intelligent animal, turning it into man?

The somewhat degrading term 'intelligent animal' must not lead us to think that we are talking about some kind of inferior being, far from it, the meaning here is a first generation consciousness as that of plants and animals-complete, but not yet second identity. These primeval beings were much closer to God than we are, and had direct contact with Him.

The Bible tells us that the sons of God saw that the daughters of man were beautiful, and took them for themselves, and the women became pregnant and bore children. It is a shame that the language of that time could find no other way of describing the occurrence, but the principle was correct.

Selected women became pregnant and their children were the descendents of the gods, inheriting one or more godly talents, the first humans. After a while, humanity existed partly out of real humans, and partly out of intelligent animals; so what next? A definite separation of the real humans from the animals.

The famous story of the flood is in fact the story of the destruction of unwanted genetic material. In the lame-scroll (Quamran, Dead sea scrolls) is told that the true father of humanity was Noah who looked like one of the sons of god but, according to his mother, was not. This is exactly as it was meant to be, Noah and his wife and children had to he pure human, and not a sort of half god. The flood was also a mentality selection, they were selected because of their noble characters and their obedience to God. It was a loving gesture from Jahwe to His people to lighten their handicap that came from the conditions on the planet. This selection was to lighten the suffering of mankind. In how far it is true that Noah and his family were the only survivors of this catastrophe, is of no importance, what is important is the principle of the selection.

The new ego-consciousness.

And so man emerged. A talent, or absolute consciousness-component, was planted into

the body-ego of the intelligent animal, and with it the reflective power that is indestructible (timeless), the individual soul. In fact, the human soul is the smallest possible particle of the talents of the gods that lived during the formation, at the end of the divergence and division process. A soul is not something based on coincidence, but some-thing created by an infinite God to exactly complement a coincidental creation; man. Our soul is immortal, but not yet perfected; that will come later. Now we are concerned with the new identity, is that here already?

No, not a sign of it. The body of man is the same as that of plants an animals, a first-generation consciousness - even though Satan expresses himself in it as a combination of first and second generation consciousness, it is still a life-form that reflects the infinite love-will, as did the gods. The new talent-ego is clearly first generation, and then of direct absolute origin. Originally (like a baby), man has the same identity as the gods, a first generation consciousness.

Is there then no difference between gods and men?

The first difference is the ego, the centre of self-respect from which creative expression flows. The gods 'were' a fraction (a particle of an objective) of the absolute ego or character; they had an ego of the Spirit, and accepted their body-ego with its Satan component as ballast. They were "Spirit become flesh".

In man it is the exact opposite; we are originally body-ego, or the consciousness of the flesh, and we still have to create the spirit. We are "flesh becoming spirit".

This is the first phase of the transformation process through which the absolute identity will change itself into the new identity, a different ego. A transformation process contains a definite distinction between input and output or primary and secondary, and in this consciousness-terminology I have chosen the words 'transformation original' for the input, and 'transformation human' for the output.

To put it all in a nutshell, the last divergence of the gods, the size of a man, was the smallest particle of the consciousness of God (an angel), carrying a particle of the consciousness of Satan (a demon). In contrast, man is a demon carrying a particle of the consciousness of God (an angel).

A baby or infant has only a body-ego; he yells when he is hungry or has a pain, or wants attention or protection, hut within the child sleeps a godly talent fraction that has yet to develop. And what is that talent? It is the smallest particle of the absolute character of one of the Archangels. Jesus said in Matthew 18,10 that every child has an angel in heaven who "always beholds the face of my Father which is in heaven". See how one sentence can confirm pages of theory.

The new character.

In the previous chapter it was stated that the new character will be formed by mixing the smallest possible character-fractions of the Archangels, because this mixing produces something new. This demands the mixing of talents, the total mixing of absolute

character-components which ensures perfect anonymity.

This creation process takes place every day, all around us. A child grows and becomes aware of himself. In the first place, this is an awareness of his body-ego in relation to his surroundings. Then comes a period of indulgence that consists of playing and learning until the age of about eight years when the game of life changes into a new period of development of the talent-ego. The child chooses, usually unconsciously, for certain things that he likes doing, and he neglects the things that do not attract him. In fact, he chooses for a certain direction that will develop his inborn talents, and the choice is strongly affected by his environment, the talents, and the mentality of others (his parents).

What it is really all about is this second period of awakening, the learning of a trade, science, or skill. This is then followed by a second period of indulgence in which the things that have been learned are practiced, and which preferably result in creativity, his work. At about thirty years of age, the personality is formed, but this does not mean that the learning process stops; and it also does not mean that someone of eighteen years old cannot be formed as a personality. People who die young are very often formed at an early age. A soul is a timeless thing that was formed in the past, and is the 'filling' of a coincidence of today: a human being. The ages mentioned can therefore vary a great deal.

The point of this transformation process is the mixing of the talents. A person develops his latent absolute talent with the help of his intelligent body-ego; but he or she can only do this by using the talents of others. The Earth is an area that abounds with the godly talents of this, and all the previous generations. Our technical and scientific development started with the first weapon for hunting, the first fire, the first wheel, etc. Generation after generation, man has built a fabulous knowledge field that is preserved in books, papers, films, tapes, buildings, machines, roads, cars, aircraft, rockets, computers, and so on and so on; an ocean of knowledge surrounds a young person in his second period of awakening. From this ocean, he picks up a packet of impulses and ideas, and uses them in conjunction with his inborn latent talent to form the choice for a particular branch of work or hobby. A skill does not exist in this versatile world for which someone can make use of his one talent alone, the talent is too small and too restricted because of the number of people over which the absolute talents are shared. It makes no difference whether it is carpentry or nursing, football or scientific work, all require more than one talent fraction.

Through his toils, man forms a new consciousness by the anchoring of his talent in the many other talents of other people, and this is a really new existence that is immortal. As the Bible says about the dead; they rest from their labours, their works accompany them. A new consciousness formation takes place through these works a unique character mix that could only take place on Earth. With the help of a new ego, a new character is formed; is this then the new Partner Identity?

No, it is another intermediate form. As long as life is still a reflection and we are still holding the famous mirror in our hands, we cannot really love the Father. A new life and love principle are needed for a new Identity.

The quality of the talents.

Wherever man is engaged in the formation of a new character, it can he understood that the most valuable talents are those that were not present in the ABSOLUTE, those that could not manifest there. It is therefore desirable to list the three kinds of talents in order of importance.

1. The talents of the soul. These come from the love-power. They are new in the sense that they were unable to manifest in the ABSOLUTE, per definition. This is the will to care for others, and is the highest form of a talent because it is positively polarized (it is unselfish). The non-organized care for husband, wife, child, the sick, aged, handicapped, lonely, etc; and then face to face. CARE. The negative polarization is the anti-care, profiteering and discrimination against others.
2. The mixed talents of the soul and spirit. These are also new and contribute to the formation of the new character. It is taking the trouble to organize something for others or for oneself within the work situation. Work with head or hands; and under this we can gather most of the activities of man, from work in hospitals or schools to factories and offices, from manual skills to sport, from a piano to a typewriter. SKILL.
3. The talents of the spirit. These are not new, but they are adapted to the Earth environment, and as such is indispensable as will be explained later. This is the thinking out of new things, designs, investigations, constructions, the determination of new strategies or procedures, leadership. Competence.

A soul is a configuration of absolute consciousness components that is described here as a mixture of talent fractions. If talents come exclusively from the soul, then what are talents of the spirit? With the word spirit we do not deny the role of the soul, but indicate the work terrain of the spirit, in knowledge and thought. Caring for someone manifests itself in the terrain of the love power, the soul. We can call the talents of mankind; care, skill and competence.

Confirmation from the Bible.

People exist that do not develop their talents because they are intensely lazy, they do not take part in the talent mixing, and endeavour to live from others; these are the profiteers of our society, and live from exploitation of others, theft, or deceit. What happens to those who refuse to complete the transformation process?

Beware of those who are too lazy to work, but stick their noses into everything, they are the epitomy of failure, one of the talent-less beings who will one day scourge the Earth. They refuse to take part in the identity transformation process, and do not create an

immortal soul, for the simple reason that they do not use the soul, and then it remains a first generation talent fraction that is not anchored in the (Earth) character of Man.

With their deaths, their original talent ego ceases to exist and they live on in their body ego (demonic). By not wishing to work they choose against life, because life is work, and they exclude themselves from the participation in the goal of creation. This conclusion is so profound that it is desirable to seek some form of verification, all the more because the theory behind it is complex and seems mysterious.

Somewhat to my surprise, I found almost exact confirmation of this formation process in the Bible in the form of the parable of the ten pounds (Luke. 19,11-27), and the parable of the talents (mat. 25,14-30). The master of the house left on a journey and gave each of his servants a pound, with the command to do business with it while he was away. On his return, he asked the servants to account for themselves: the first servant had earned nine extra pounds and was praised for his efforts; the second had earned four extra pounds and was also praised for his efforts. The third servant, in contrast, had buried his pound in the earth, and returned it to his master with the task denying arguement that his master reaped what he had not sown, and demanded what he had not given. His master did not deny this, as God demands at least one more talent that we have earned all by ourselves. His master answered him by saying: Out of your own mouth I judge you wicked servant, you knew that I require more than I have given, and yet you refused to comply. Most important here is that the servant did not WISH to comply with his masters orders; if he had said: I did my best, but I failed; he would not have been condemned as a worthless servant. The punishment is remarkable in itself; firstly, his one pound or talent is taken from him, and then it is given to the one who already had ten. To those who have shall be given in abundance, but those who do not have shall be taken away even that which they do have. And the worthless servant is cast out into outer darkness. And there shall be weeping and a gnashing of teeth. These are the only parables reputably from the mouth of Jesus that mention the exact reason for exclusion from participation: not wishing to take part because of inactivity. They are also the only parables in which the consciousness division is mentioned, the talent, a consciousness component, was taken from the lazy servant and given to another; in other words, the consciousness configurations were changed. The failure looses everything, and it is given to the one who has the most. Both actions come from the previous explanation. The failures will form the Satan Consciousness, because Satan is also talentless. The successful beings gain an absolute talent fraction because the goal is the mixing to prevent too much one-sidedness in the (human) talents gained. This means that a human being also has a divisible consciousness that can be increased or decreased, and this principle is the basis of the final formation of humanity as will be explained later.

The first goal of our present existence.

We are now engaged in the creation of a new unique character from a new ego-consciousness, and the only thing that we still need in order to realize our goal in the new partner identity, is the new life and love-will with which we can create our new life.

How will we ever be able to do this?

In just about the same way as the ALL-consciousness did it. There in the void existed ALL egos, bound into unity in the ALL-character. The complete unanimity of all egos caused the almighty life and love-will, and through this they brought themselves to life. What we are doing now is to create a new kind of ALL-character, namely the all-character of the whole of humanity, which contains ALL human ego. We are also engaged in the formation of a new kind of perfect knowledge; the complete knowledge of humanity. The law of conservation retains all the knowledge and experience ever gained within the closed circuit of the Earth consciousness. Even the smallest thought can never be lost.

So, we are busy with a repetition of the situation as it was before the bounding, and up until now we seem to be doing alright; what are we still lacking? In the first place the ALL-might or a somewhat lesser power, that we need to be able to create our own love and life-will. Where will this come form?

If we are a transformation of the gods on Earth, of which Jahwe had the all encompassing ego-consciousness; then a complete humanity must also have the ego-consciousness that is equal to that of Jahwe, and therefore equal to that of God: we shall then have the ALL-might that is prepared for us in the Word, the All-might of Jahwe. Even this is not too difficult. Are we then complete?

You can work the answer out for yourself. Life only exists where it is certain that it will reach its goal. If the coincidence MAN should appear to be capable of destroying all life by means of weapons of mass destruction, then in principle mankind must be complete so that such a calamity would not have any irreparable consequences.

This demands an explanation: the number of divergences of the gods in finite, so it is obvious that at a certain moment all souls have become human and have anchored themselves by the mixing. As will be explained later, every transformation original (primary ego) lives many lives, so that the total number of beings is not sharply defined; a few hundred million more or less makes very little difference. As soon as total destruction threatens, the lowest number must have been reached so that this phase in our evolution can be terminated without serious consequences. We can therefore argue that we are now in an end phase, the end of time.

Why are we not almighty then?

Because for almight, the complete unanimity of all mankind is needed, among other things.

The unanimity of all mankind? That's a laugh; everyone wants something different!

That is correct; that is why something will have to happen after this life to bring about this unanimity. You must realize that the same situation existed in the ABSOLUTE; everyone there wanted something different, and that is why nothing happened. It was the Spirit God, the Ego of the perfect knowledge, that created the unanimity, and He could

do that because each of the Tens of Thousands had that knowledge as a personal memory. Only when everyone knows the same things, can everyone want the same things. To know everything is to understand everything. So, that process will take place in the realm of the not yet living Spirit that brought itself to life, also a realm of the dead. The Absolute was the realm of the dead.

Our collective spirit.

All human knowledge remains within the closed circuit of the Earth's consciousness, according to the law of conservation. We live in splendid isolation, shut out from the rest of the universe. Next to our material memory each human being has an immaterial and infallible memory that houses in our vibration double or life principle, the exact duplicate of our body as it was meant to be (in immaterial energy). Every cell is present with the exception of fat and tumours. All the hairs of your head are numbered, as are your deeds. This immaterial memory is alas unable to be proved, but there are strong signs that it exists. For example, under hypnosis, a person seems to be able to remember the strangest things that happened in his childhood, things that his brain-memory has long forgotten.

Plants and animals have a similar memory; a plant that is connected to a lie detector demonstrates quite clearly that it can remember which person has mishandled it or shown aversion to it in any way. Although these types of test can be verified scientifically, they are more often than not rejected as providing proof of an immaterial memory, but this will all change when it is discovered that even an atomic field (also a vibration double) has a memory. As we said earlier, the problem with the Creation is that everything turns out to be immortal, even machines. Every-thing in which human creativity has been invested remains, under the law of conservation, within the Earth-consciousness, and can be recalled at any time by a consciousness that has the power of mind over matter as we will, some time in the future.

So, not only our vibration double has a memory, but also the Earth's vibration double, and then in the form of the earlier described knowledge-field. This field is not only contained in the material memory in the form of films, books, machines, buildings, and so on, but also, and in the first place, in the immaterial memory, the vibration double. From this, every material form can be recalled, from plants to radios; the only thing being that then a specimen of the sort appears, and not a particular example. Only man has an individual life-field, and remains in existence as an individual.

For the moment we will remain by the immaterial knowledge-field of Earth, the collective spirit of mankind. As has been said, we are flesh engaged in becoming spirit, we are creating the spirit with the new identity of the Partner, and this is a dualistic spirit because we are dualistic.

The collective Spirit does not live, and is therefore not a part of the life reflection of the Father, and therefore does have the new identity; and He will later create the new life. Before we continue with a description of this Spirit, it is interesting to find out whether

any proof exists of His existence. There appears to be proof enough, even accompanied by well documented reports concerning an American, Edgar Cayce. This man was a medium who could contact the Spirit, and at such moments he possessed the Spirit as a personal memory and spoke in the ' I ' or 'WE' form. Exactly as in the ABSOLUTE, he only Used that part of the Spirit that belonged by his character, and in this case it was knowledge concerning matters of health.

His achievements were fantastic; he came up with knowledge of the living and the dead that only the person himself could have known. He could 'find' the body of someone who was ill at a distance of a thousand kilometres, and diagnose his illness. He prescribed special medicines that often caused a rapid recovery; and often he prescribed medicines that were still secret and not in production. When he was in contact with someone who was ill, even at long distances, and the person died during the sceance, he knew it immediately, to the second. A comprehensive study of his achievements has been made, and proof is present in abundance.

Telepathic contacts take place through the vibration double or the life-field of humans, because all are bound to the one knowledge field with one Ego-consciousness, also the dead, because the life-field is timeless.

The only difference being that the dead are composed totally of the life-field, and so they experience such contact directly, and we as a rule do not.

The Ego of our Spirit.

It is surprising to hear what our collective consciousness in fact represents. He speaks as a person with an ego, and answers every question. He knows everything, but everything, that has ever taken place by mankind, and has not only knowledge of the facts, but possesses fantastic wisdom and insight. For example, he knows with photographic precision exactly what airships, rockets, and atomic weapons used by the primeval gods looked like for as far as they were ever seen by human beings. The smallest detail of modern computers, or how a rocket can be placed on the moon is known to him; He knows so much and possesses such knowledge and wisdom that He could sometimes be mistaken for God himself.

It does not matter how many people know something, as long as one knows, that is enough. We do not have to worry that the knowledge of science and technology will remain the secret of an elite group; each person, even those from the stone age, will be able to speak from a personal memory, as does this Ego-consciousness of the Spirit of mankind. Obviously, he will only be able to use that part that fits with his character, but he will know the rest as well. This collective memory is like a gigantic construction, the result of all our toils, in which each person has laid a stone. A person is then effectively present in this memory, and everything that he has ever known is available from this data bank; all the memories of happiness and suffering are present, and can be re-lived.

The spirit knows even the most horrific things, but they do not disturb Him, He is not alive and does not (yet) love. He is Spirit the collective Ego of our knowledge and

experience, but He has no love-will, and is therefore not creative. Discussion with him is not possible, he knows what he knows, and that is that. He does not speak for himself, but repeats what he has heard.. He has a billion-fold ego-consciousness, and yet he is alone, just like the original ABSOLUTE. He is not happy or unhappy, He just IS. He regards humanity as the input for His computer in which every thought is registered simply because it is indestructible; He is already an ocean of consciousness. Lastly, He also seems to know the future; not the predestinations, but pure advance knowledge concerning the outcome of coincidences; He knows the future of each individual up to and including the moment of death. The quantity of information is astonishing, it is unbelievable what humanity has done and experienced, He has ego-consciousness that exceeds our wildest imagination.

The process in which every human being makes this memory personal takes place after death. The integration process takes some hundreds of years, and many of the dead have already gained this knowledge, as we will. In death, man becomes part of a wonderful existence in a level of Godly consciousness (Nirwana). After relinquishing all desires, he or she reaches a situation of peace and serenity brought about by the breathtaking knowledge and experience that is constantly updated by the new knowledge and experience of the living generation. They become new gods in embryo who, one day, all together, will reach the new unanimity through which the immortal life of the new partner will be created.

The realm of the dead.

The only information that I was given concerning this subject was that necessary to provide a general impression of the development process. To begin with, the realm of the dead contains no frightening elements; we come from the realm of the not yet living spirit, and we return to it again, changed; so everything strikes us as being familiar. Every being experiences this process of realization differently; some people are taken in the prime of their lives, and in the beginning do not realize that they are dead; for example, some ask for petrol for the car in which they were riding, and this is an example of just how little shocking death can be.

Others are sometimes quite shocked because they have never believed that they would continue to exist after death, but nobody dies alone; parents, family, friends, and loved ones await to welcome us and help us to understand our new situation, and to relax. We exist in our life-field, and exact copy of own body as it should be; we hear and see quite normally. A life field contains a point of light for every cell, and seeing that our bodies are made up of billions of cells, we look quite normal and are recognizable to others. Furthermore, we are dressed, and this is also the case for primitive peoples that were used to running around naked in this life.

This is the realm of the Spirit, of thought forms and thoughts, of recollections and memory, of knowledge and experience. The body does not interest us any more, and so we see nothing more than the hands or feet and the face that serve to identify someone.

The life-fields of plants and trees are also recognizable, and are present in perfect form, with an abnormal amount of branches, leaves and flowers; the life-fields of plants are not exactly determined, but contain all possibilities of the sort which gives them a rather artificial appearance. Animals are also present, but we only become aware of them when we have a special band with them in some way or another. In clairvoyant circles, they refer to this place as the 'summer land', and this is a perfect name for these pleasant, friendly surroundings. Christ referred to it as the paradise when he spoke to one of the thieves who was crucified with him, and this is a more exact description. The paradise is, as we have explained, the 'program reserve' of the life-fields of all living things, including the sort-consciousness 'Man'. An impression of the sort has become an individual being by the addition of a soul, and this immortal individual returns to the place from whence he came; totally changed. One sort produces billions of individuals, and this continual stream of returning souls is met and guided until each one has become acclimatized and is at peace. In this paradise they experience a sphere of serenity and rest in the light of truth. The light is the most impressive thing in the paradise; it creates an exalted feeling of release and serenity, with at the same time a strong realization of individuality, of ' I ' m here, who would have thought it'. They realize fully who they are, and family ties play a much stronger role than they did on Earth. They are purely that which they have done, their work, creativity, and love; a man lives on in his works and this is not only true for the people remaining on Earth, but more so for the dead. They are spirit, memories, knowledge, and experience; they know their lives from minute to minute as though they had access to a dossier or a film. The period of coming to terms with the past life begins; satisfaction and remorse constantly replace each other, and eventually a certain pattern of affections and aversions emerges; they begin to despise certain character traits in themselves, and experience pleasure in developing the characteristics that they recognize as being good.

Next to the factual memory, a polarization pattern develops that compensates the shortcomings in their characters; a consciousness-component that is still spirit that has to indulge itself and become aware in the life after the resurrection. Their personalities are completed by this process of regret and remorse.

After this process of completion of the personality, the dead begin the next phase of the development. This can be somewhat simply compared to a person shutting themselves up in a gigantic library in which the complete world literature is present complete with a cinema containing all the worlds films. He or she begins to study, but this is where the comparison ceases, because this being is spirit and is therefore knowledge, experience, and wisdom.

He exists purely for and through knowledge, nothing else interests him; and what is more, this learning process is effort-less because he has an immaterial and infallible memory system that only has to see something for a fraction of a second, and it is retained forever. Add to this that this process becomes increasingly faster as the knowledge increases and an effect is obtained as of entering the collective knowledge of

mankind. In this way the dead obtain the earlier mentioned ego-consciousness of mankind, and this is already at a godly level of consciousness. He then lives in an ecstatic condition of happiness s and serenity, that has come about through the widening of his consciousness.

Then begins the last phase of the development, they become the spectators of the living generation; in fact they have been this for a long time, but it is easier to explain in this phase.

What is actually going on here is. the duplication of the Absolute Spirit, the formation of a new All-character with an unbounded multiple ego-consciousness. Each ego has the new all-knowledge, and therefore experiences every addition to this knowledge. The living generation sends a constant flow of creativity and thought to this knowledge, and the dead who have the ego-consciousness of the knowledge, experience everything as if they were present in the flesh; they live in the living. They take part in every activity, but are unable to change anything by the living; they are and remain spectators, a non manipulation and non creative spirit. The living hold the reins, but they are influenced through their subconscious where everyone has ties with the knowledge.

All this can be reasoned from the assumption that all knowledge remains within the closed circuit to which it belongs, in this case the Earth's consciousness.

Every deed will become known to our fellow man, no matter how secret it may be; the moment of truth comes to everyone, and we will have to come to terms with our sins. The purpose of the realm of the dead is the fantastic development and forming of every individual; one day, a being will arise with the knowledge, the wisdom, and the experience of tens of thousands of years of humanity; they will be gods who know everything that has ever taken place on Earth, because this forms their identity. These gods will very definitely be human, and as such will continue to perform their Godly creation commission.

They will have an individual mentality that radiates energy and the self-confidence to do it better this time. They will not make the same mistakes again. This is how the dead exist, waiting for the time of the resurrection, without which, death would be pointless. This process is the logical consequence of the preceding creation story, our present existence is one of transformation, we are flesh that is becoming spirit, and the newly formed consciousness, the spirit, would be worthless if we could not claim it for ourselves, and for the majority of people, this will take place in the realm of the dead.

From the previous explanation, we can conclude that the transformation process is finite, so what will happen to the last living generation? Will they have to complete this purification and forming process before the resurrection can take place?

Naturally, why should they be any different. The realm of the dead is the first goal of mankind, and participation in the life after the resurrection is dependent upon that development. This means that humanity, after having completed its numbers, will have to completely die out in order to permit the last generation to develop itself individually.

To accomplish this, a natural disaster will take place at the end of the transformation process in which all intelligent life will be destroyed. This conclusion comes from the logic of the creation story, and is not a prophesy that comes from foresight. The same conclusion can be made from the submission that our reflection-life is temporary, because we have to create another kind of life ourselves. Life on Earth will have to end and remain this way for many hundreds of years, because otherwise the next phase of the creation process cannot begin. It is essential that mankind understands the necessity for this seeming disaster, because otherwise it will become wasted, and it can elevate the character of an enlightened humanity.

Are you referring to the infamous atomic threat?

That is possible, but not necessary. Even though the escalation of the atomic and bacteriological arms threat is too mad to describe, it is clear that you possess the ability to destroy each other or burn each other alive.

We are balancing on the edge of a precipice, but everything depends on what really happens, and happily, I do not know any more than the next man, but I think it unlikely that the heads of state sitting on 'the knob' will dare to burden themselves with the greatest sin against the goal of creation that exists, when even the greatest saboteur of the plan will try to prevent this happening with every power at his disposal (explanation later). The greatest danger to us at the moment is that a great war is started by accident, so we must hope that the safety measures are perfect.

The destruction prepared in the Word will take place in a natural disaster which will be triggered by mankind itself, and the trigger will be the unanimity in fear that is also shared by the dead because they are directly involved with the living. It was said earlier that the unanimity of a completed humanity results in an almighty impulse together with the fusion of human and Earth matter-consciousness which causes a recoil in the Earth-matter.

Real fear is panic, and this causes confusion; it disturbs the natural order of, for example, the delicate balance that controls the planet's surface. The Earth can be compared to a spinning top that is at the point of falling over; all it needs is a slight knock, and humanity will do this at the critical moment. Our planet is in critical phase; the mass balance in the Earth flywheel has slowly changed, and it only needs a shock to change the angle of the axis. When, by one means or another, a worldwide unanimity in fear manifests itself, this will result in the pole-shift, and the Earth will no longer turn on the poles but on two axis which are many degrees apart. The catastrophe will be over within a short time; the Earth's crust will move like the deck of a ship in a storm; the power of the heavens will falter, and stars will fall from the heavens. Earthquakes will cause volcanoes to erupt and death and destruction will be everywhere. The water in the oceans will stampede and flood big land areas, it wm become pitch dark, and then the atmosphere will catch fire. Fire-bolts and heavy thunder follow each other so quickly that it will seem as if gigantic quick firing guns are being used to attack the Earth.

Hurricanes will displace huge earth masses, and mountain tops will crash into the valleys. No stone will be left unturned, it will be an inferno without equal. All human works will be destroyed, along with all humanity and the higher animals. Only a small group will be saved, and that by extra-terrestrial help (explanation follows).

It must be explained that this will be a quick and easy death; the almost almighty fear will put mankind into a state of shock that is close to unconsciousness (narcosis), and the end will be completed with the minimum of suffering. If we, God forbid, should start an atomic war, then suddenly the almighty fear would manifest itself as a shock that would cause the same inferno, only it would be somewhat early, the survivors would be given a quick and merciful death, but the suffering would be much greater. A large part of the world population would not be directly confronted with the atomic inferno, but would realize much later what was awaiting them, and the trigger would be pulled many days later. Further, an atomic or bacteriological annihilation would have other more serious consequences, but I do not know what this means. My feelings tell me that this will never happen, because the consequences of that coincidence have not yet been prepared for.

I must explain that I feel deeply unhappy in my role of prophet of disaster, and I have often played with the idea of omitting these facts from my book; but the total destruction of mankind is such a vital and logical part of the great creation plan that it cannot be omitted for any reason. The omission would be noticed at the first reading, and, having no other choice but to present a complete account to my readers, I will hasten to add that the prediction is of no great importance at the moment because the disaster will be announced by three great signs that no one will be able to mistake. The calming effect of these signs is that they are 80 unlikely that no one will lose any sleep over them.

1. The denial of a personal God here on Earth will be removed, after which mankind will become aware of her dependence on a Godly plan.
2. After this, a world wide religious renaissance will manifest within the existing religions, and at the same time it will become a conviction.
3. The most unlikely sign will be the appearance of an anti-godly being who will be able to gain control of the whole world, despite the two military powers. His actions will be so superior that he will be able to ignore the military, and he will terrorize humanity in a frightful way because of his hysterical hate of God.

As long as these signs have not appeared, the natural disasters will not take place.

The creation commission of mankind.

Our commission is almost completed, and we are now living in the last phase. The transformation process from first to second generation is, in principle, complete; the new spirit with the new character and ego is ready for the next phase, and nothing or nobody can destroy Him. We are standing on the brink of fantastic developments and the birth pains of a new time that promise a wonderful future to mankind. Perhaps this can act as a reassurance to the people who think that mankind is doomed because of all the over

population problems, the scarcity of natural resources, hunger, pollution, wars, and the general decay of morals. We are not a failure, we have succeeded in a wonderful way; not much longer, and the proud moment will come when the spirit of mankind can report; humanity present, mission completed. We have added a new and exceptional character to gigantic consciousness that is developing in the universe, but it is not to be praised or condemned; it is a coincidence that is determined by the conditions on our planet. There is no reason whatsoever for a feeling of inferiority, we have succeeded, the epic of man was not written for nothing; but on the other hand, it has become quite clear that we will have to change our ways in many things before we can continue.

CHAPTER 6

The Human Experiment

The disobedience of Man.

When we look at the history of mankind, the first thing that becomes evident is the dominance of evil. It is a continuing story of occurrences of which little good can be told; the struggle for power, wars, slavery, rape, murder, exploitation, etc, etc. The number of people that have died a violent death cannot be guessed, but the figures must run into hundreds of millions; what suffering, and what have we gained by all this, was it not possible to have done everything a little more elegantly? It seems completely logical that every sober thinking being should come to the conclusion that a God of love cannot possibly exist.

The solution to this problem demands a deep insight into the creation process we cannot suffice with stating that the Word was necessarily dualistic. The Earth fulfils an exceptional task in the creation process by having a different transformation cycle than other planets. The most common cycles by the intelligent races are guided by a manifesting God, and this reduces the suffering greatly. This guidance is bound by definite restrictions, of which the most important is that the freedom and the chance character of the race must not be compromised. God cannot and may not force a choice between good and evil, especially when the freedom of choice of the majority is in question; to do this would be in contradiction with the Word, and would therefore be evil in itself. This restriction reduces God's powers in no small way, and this provokes the question, what can God do?

As a rule, a great deal; but only when the whole race is prepared to obey Him, and to demand the same obedience from each individual. It then becomes possible to block the normal ideas of good and evil, and, although it seems unbelievable that an intelligent race should not know the difference between good and evil, there are some people who maintain that WE do not kn6w the difference! On the obedient planets, the standards of good and evil have been replaced by the difference between obedience and disobedience to God. What is allowed is good, and what is not allowed is evil; its that simple.

There, the guiding God manifests himself often and clearly, so that there can be no doubt of the fact that he really is present. He then proclaims a set of far-reaching laws that must by obeyed by everyone, and which contain a great number of rules that regulate everyday life down to the smallest detail. There, the beings are engaged in obeying their God from the time they get up until the time they go to sleep.

The majority have the task of punishing the disobedient, and that is not always done mildly; the demonic elements are present in the same way as by ourselves, and this demands a strong hand to keep things under control. The punishments vary from the payment of compensation to beating, whipping, and quite often, the death sentence,

which is used because purification takes place in the realm of the dead, which is not the case on Earth.

This guidance can therefore only take place when the multitude obey God of their own free will. What would happen for example if only half of the people were prepared to obey? Then the one half would have to punish the other half, and this would simply result in the changing or the weakening of the laws, but more likely in chaos and murder. This means that Godly guidance is only possible with a certain type of character in which the majority obey God, and then the transformation process takes place much more elegantly and with much less suffering than we must endure.

The key is therefore the obedience out of free will, and that means doing what is demanded without asking why. This kind of guidance is impossible for the human race; perhaps we would have obeyed God if we had known why we had to do this, but then it would no longer be obedience, and also, only an unknowing humanity can complete the transformation process. The conditions on this planet made us a fundamentally disobedient race, and we cannot help that. A timeless God who knows the future does not have to experiment, He made man Himself; the character-type was determined, humans are self-willed and think they know everything better, so they must be left alone to do it on their own. We are sitting here on our planet playing at being our own boss, and there is no God who bothers Himself about us (for the moment).

The original sin.

The bible story of the original sin in the book of Genesis is clearly the story of the disobedience of man and as a kind. Regardless of the fact that it was forbidden, the man and the woman ate the fruit of the tree of knowledge, and their eyes were opened. By doing this, they lost their right to Godly protection and security and had to fend for themselves. God did not curse them for what they had done, which would seem to be the most logical course, but cursed the soil under their feet, because there lay the cause of their disobedience. The Earth is a small iron based planet with a thin atmosphere, extreme weather conditions, and a scarce supply of natural foods. Humans had to be able to survive in temperatures varying from plus 50 deg. C to minus 50 deg. C, and in arctic blizzards and tropical cyclones; so they had to be violent, obstinate, and insistent They had to be a race of clever hunters and hut builders and weapon makers; man had to fight for his existence with all the power and ingenuity he could muster, rich in inventivity, but poor in sensitivity. He had to trust in his own judgement and courage, and take little notice of the ideas of others. Only a hard, brilliant, self-assured being with a strong reproductive instinct could hope to survive the struggle for existence on this planet. Compared to the delicate dwarf races who inhabit the strongly eroded 'glass house' type planets with fertile ground and an abundance of natural foods, we are a kind of cosmic weed that can be planted anywhere and will always survive. The typical Earth character is self-assured, inventive, courageous, aggressive, virile, and victorious.

Is all this so evil that it adds up to a great sin?

No, it is really quite excellent, and the only trouble with such a race is that you can't do anything with them, it is impossible to help them even if they wanted to be helped. There is nothing wrong with self-sufficiency, it is just a pity for mankind that it is a handicap because it stimulates selfishness and man then becomes easy prey for the spirit of selfishness (Satan), a very annoying consequence. The original sin was a decrease in the level of polarization, less love and more egoism, and this came about by the exclusion of the Godly guidance. Obedience has an exceptional characteristic, in everything in which man obeys God, he remains guiltless, obedience is doing what someone else wants, are not what you want to do yourself; it is unselfish by definition. Obedience to Godly laws gives a person a high level of polarization, and this level increases with every increase in obedience. Good and evil do not exist, and so the person has nothing to repay to Satan. What happens when mankind turns its back on God and says 'I am going to do it my way'? Before we do anything, we have the high polarization level of obedience, and are reduced to the level that the gods created here on Earth; mixed artificial dualism. The difference between altruism and egoism comes into existence, and partly due to the self-sufficiency, selfishness becomes dominant. So, this is the sin the Bible describes, and at the same time an explanation of that original sin with which every human is burdened.

The risks of being our own boss.

Is humanity complete? Disregarding all the children that are being born, and naturally will have to take part in the process as will be explained later, humanity is not yet complete. We are a second generation of Archangels in miniature, the being of a developing new God. We are at the helm, but we can do no more than the Archangels could without the Father and Lucifer, the love poles of the infinite. Without them it does not work.

It was explained earlier that humanity must have a new life and love will in order to obtain the partner identity; as long as we still have the reflected life and love will, we cannot truly love the Father, we still have the mirror in our hands. What do we need to obtain that love power? A new infinite love will? Clearly not, the infinite does not have to be bounded again, and a second will cannot exist because the infinite is indivisible. It will have to be another almighty love will with a different identity, and not infinite. We still lack the All-might and the two love poles, two beings with a second generation consciousness, the Son of the Father, and the son of Lucifer.

The first is the Son, and the second is Satan who actually has a double identity. In contrast to the Father and Lucifer who manifested only through reflection, the Son and Satan can manifest without reflection. Where do they come from? Without a doubt, from the All before the bounding. If the goals of the Father and Lucifer existed there, then these goals necessarily contained the Partner, because without this, love was not possible. In exactly the same way as the first time, the second generation of Archangels, mankind, will set the second love power in working by action as the conductor through which the field flux occurs between the two poles of the almighty love will. In the same

way, it would be possible for Satan to overpower this second generation of Archangels during the period of their indulgence, as soon as they had reached the required level of selfishness Satan would then have the right to collect the selfishness that had been stolen from him, and this right would exist as soon as a certain number of beings existed with a certain negative polarization. This is where the deadly danger appears that threatens every intelligent race that rejects Godly guidance; the polarization drops to such a level that the race becomes an easy target for Satan.

In the normal cycle under Godly guidance, the polarization usually remains high enough to avoid the race being overpowered before the end of time, but for us, it is unavoidable that this will happen prematurely. Without guidance it is impossible for us to improve our polarization, on the contrary, it deteriorates, and at present it is clear that the polarization (mentality) is deteriorating. It is just a matter of time before humanity lands in the power of Satan. A race of individualists was, according to the Word, destined to learn the perfect love in the same terrible way as did the Archangels.

And this is what would have happened if Lucifer had won. Actually, the Word contained two possibilities, and this brings us to the question of what is going to happen to this prodigal race now that the Father has won? Can Satan still appear according to the Word and subjugate the human race? An interesting question. He is immortal; an absolute consciousness with the power of mind over matter. He would have humanity in his power until their completion, and could perpetrate every terror that he wished. Does he have the right according to the Word to demand the power? Would he, according to the Word, have created the perfect love? No, he is no longer a pure egoist, but a highly impure saboteur of the Word. He would have misused his power to impose a system upon us that is aimed at impurity; then he would have used refined tricks to teach us that life only exists out of lies, deceit, distrust, sadism, and perversity, we would be doomed to a pointless and degrading existence. He would doubtlessly have reached his goal, and taken the majority of humanity with him to his grave. This just could not happen, so what must happen?

I don't quite see the problem. Satan was powerless against God, and if he did not keep to the Word, then surely God was also no longer bound to the Word?

Your remark is typical of the mentality that keeps the arms race going, for example; someone only needs to be honest so long as the opponent is also honest, and this makes him fundamentally a liar! Your solution is unknown to the Spirit God. God cannot prevent the incarnation of Satan as this would be against the Word. This is the problem.

The Son becomes flesh.

How did God in all his wisdom solve the problem of the intelligent races with an 'our own boss' cycles, in the Word? It was the Blocking of Satan by the Son.

My teachers put a great deal of emphasis on this answer, and I must formulate my explanation very carefully, because the validity is not only a question for God, but in greater measure for man. A once completed humanity will have to acknowledge the

validity of this Godly intervention unanimously and with complete conviction, otherwise we ourselves will not wish to take part in the completion. Then it will have to be determined:

1. That human freedom is not compromised.
2. That the original polarization of humanity was lower than that of the races where no Godly intervention took place (more evil, already proved).
3. That the Son did not gain any advantage over Satan through the intervention, on the contrary, that the Son found Himself at a disadvantage.
4. That Satan, after the blocking, must be given every chance t6 realize his goal, the exclusion of as many humans as possible from the completion.
5. That Satan is fully compensated for the debt of mankind.

These five points will be explained in more detail, but firstly the principle of the intervention.

The Word determined that both the Son and Satan should become man (human), and that the Son should be given the opportunity to gather all the people who had original absolute powers and talents (all the real humans), and after the purification, they will be the one all-encompassing Ego of the human manifestation of the Son, the Son of Man. By encompassing all these transformed talents, the Son will be almighty, and this becomes of fundamental importance during the completion.

In contrast, Satan will be given the opportunity to gather all the talent less who have His identity, he will overpower them and take possession of them through which all will have his character and Ego.

During the purification, Satan will demand the repayment of all the selfishness and impurity because he has a right to it so that he can perfect his consciousness. When this is complete, the Son of man convergence, the new God, will block the complete Satan consciousness for all time with an almighty impulse. The reason for this premature description is to make it clear that the Son of man is the only one who has the right to block the earthly Satan. On the other hand, this demonstrates that when the right of Satan came into being more then twenty centuries ago, humanity was not complete and therefore the Son of man could not in any way be almighty.

Many intelligent races have already reached completion through which the cosmic Son really did have the power to block Satan. The intervention of Jahwe God in the human transformation process was twofold; in the first place, twenty centuries ago, He prematurely created the situation that was required to implement the Son becoming human, and in the second place, He will have to give the Son access to the universal convergence to enable the blocking of Satan, and this is an interference from outside the closed circuit of the Earth consciousness (unnatural).

The chosen people.

For an almighty God who, in a flash, created the universe, this would seem to be a simple problem, but that is a mistake. The free choice of mankind is sacred, and according to the Word, the only way the Son can be summoned is by the necessary polarization level of at least a group of human beings. The same goes for Satan, and this is what the freedom of choice is about, the polarization. How was it possible for Jahwe to create the necessary high level of polarization, even in a small group, among a humanity that was ripe for Satan? As explained earlier, this was only possible among a group who obeyed a manifesting God, and in this case, in a group that was isolated from the rest of the world. This is the reason for the formation and guidance of the chosen people, the Jews. This people, created by Jahwe through isolation and selection, had to have the character type that the rest of the world did not have, obedience. They had to reach the necessary level of polarization, firstly under duress and later of their own free will, that was necessary for the appearance of the Son. This isolation was also the cause of an alienation with the other peoples which the Jews would have to pay for dearly at later date. This isolation was strengthened by the period of slavery in Egypt, because being slaves, the isolation from the Egyptians was assured, and as slaves they learned obedience under a hard taskmaster. Their isolation was again assured during the forty years in the desert, and the order to destroy all the inhabitants of the promised land, including women and children; an unbelievable episode that cost many thousands of lives. This last episode illustrates how exceptional the intervention of Jahwe was to ensure the salvation of mankind.

Beside the isolation, the obedience had to be ensured, and what the Bible tells us is in fact the story of the Godly guidance as occurs on other planets where a normal transformation cycle takes place. This is extremely important and instructive because it will become clear that this guidance was totally impossible for humanity.

Jahwe manifested many times, and gave the Jews, through Moses, a comprehensive law and set of tasks that had to be followed to the letter, and that was aimed typically at the Jews of that time. A great number of rules were given that regulated their lives from A to Z, which for emancipated beings like us (adapted to selfishness) form the height of absurdity.

The punishments for disobedience were just as detailed, the death sentence for example for sexual relations outside marriage, and even within the bonds of marriage when the woman menstruated.

It is really worth the trouble to read Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers they show how far away they were from our present way of life, and illustrate better than any other method that the normal Godly guidance would have been impossible by us. People who do nothing else the whole day but obey their God obtain a large quantity of self control, unselfishness, and purity; they live constantly with God, and God identifies Himself with them. The demonic body ego is completely repressed, and that is obviously the aim, the creation of an island of purity and unselfishness.

Obedience is doing what you are told without asking why, and that is exactly what we cannot do. Here lies the advantage of the Jewish people, they did it and implemented the salvation of the whole of humanity. Don't ask me how, because even these chosen beings drove Jahwe to distraction by their pig headed disobedience. It cost many thousands of dead, but at last a drastically depleted group reached the promised land. Jahwe had taught his people to obey his laws and had eliminated disobedience by a process of selection; the formation of the chosen people was complete.

Jahwe knew the future and knew exactly the moment that this formation was complete; after this He manifested no more. Now they had to do it alone. Obedience due to fear had to be slowly changed into obedience out of free will, out of love and affection for God. So, much later, somewhere within the Jewish people, the necessary degree of purity and obedience to Gods laws was reached; they must have been a wonderful group of people according to Godly standards. The mutual toils of the Jewish people had reached its goal.

Jesus of Nazareth.

Why was the Son so demanding? Could He not have made do with less? The Son has, as does the Father, the extreme altruistic love-polarization. He is the opposite of the pure egoism and has protection against it and the power to defeat it, but He comes directly from the Absolute, direct from the Father, and has no defence against impurity. He conquers through love, but can do nothing against the destruction and sabotage of Satan. As with the Father, He only exists in a protected environment, He is as defenceless as a lamb.

His character is so delicate that if He had come into contact with impurity during His childhood, His first period of development such as lies, deceit, disobedience, or the like, He could no longer have been the Son. The smallest impurity would have prevented His awakening and therefore His becoming man only after His second awakening and when He had the Spirit within Him could He offer resistance to the impurity and have the power over Satan.

He had to become man, and that means that He had to be born to a woman who was a real human and not some special being that was created artificially by some means or another. How can a body that is tainted by Satan produce the perfect altruist?

The answer is simple; if she had ever been tainted by Satan she would never have been able to be the mother of the Son. This was the advantage of the Jewish environment, of her parents and her surroundings, there a girl could grow up so that to the moment she became a mother, she had never shown one act of disobedience against her God; and this was Maria. Her purity and obedience were so perfect that she had reached the total denial of her body ego. She had no conscious distinction between good and evil, only the distinction between what God permitted and what He forbid. She was one of the rare beings who had not eaten of the tree of knowledge. The influence of her surroundings, not her birth, had made her absolutely pure and capable of being the mother of the Son

of God.

Then who could be the father?

The Son is the equal of His opposite, an undivided absolute character. These were not Archangels, no oceans of talent and knowledge, but indivisible love poles of the almight of a developing new consciousness. Both are the personality repetitions of fundamentally the same characters that become flesh on all the life bearing planets. This simply means that no physical being on any planet could be the father of the Son. The situation is different for Satan because he has been on Earth for a long time and does not have to develop any talents; he simply takes p05session of a talent less. body ego, an intelligent animal that already has the Satan identity with the required level of intelligence.

The Son can only come into existence by intervention from outside the Earth, and this means that the conception could not take place in the natural way, on all the planets He is born of a virgin.

The purity of Maria would have been destroyed if she had ever known a man. The conception by the Spirit can be explained by the submission that the matter of a sperm cell is purely serving as a carrier of information. The important thing is the life code or vibration double which is immaterial spirit.

She was virgin and mother, the mother of Jesus of Nazareth. The real purpose of His becoming Man was the mixing of His absolute talents with certain learned Earthly talents. He became a carpenter; and was doubtless a good carpenter.

The blocking of Satan

The reason for His premature arrival caused by Jahwe was the blocking of the still freely-operating Satan, and that was the first thing He did after His real awakening. This awakening took place at the beginning of his ministry and at the end of the period of fasting during forty days in the desert (see Matt. 4 and Luke 4). After this period of total fasting and prayer in total loneliness, He gained the perfection of the Son consciousness, the Ego of the spirit of truth (the second generation of the Spirit God) and with it the knowledge and insight into the plan of creation. Through 'this interference of the Spirit He gained the cosmic insight that He had the identity of the *Christus Unitas Universitatis*, the Earthly name for the universal convergence of all the completed cosmic races, the unity of the universe. This Son convergence is almighty, as will be explained later.

The Bible tells us that He was lead into the desert by the Spirit to be tested by Satan, and then the same was true for Satan, he was also being tested. This brought the situation about that two almighty personalities suddenly faced each other somewhere in a deserted area of Earth, two personalities that could have shaken the Earth on her foundations, the Son and Satan. The descriptions of Matthew and Luke are surprisingly accurate. Satan tried to tempt Jesus, and he would not have been Satan if he had not tried to obtain worship at the same time. Finally, Satan was sent away until the specified time. The

fantastic efforts of the Jewish people had been rewarded, the gates of the hell were barred and humanity was released from her unfortunate destiny. Satan becoming man had been deferred until the end of time.

This was a gigantic interference by the *Christus U.U.* convergence in which many billions of final individuals took part, but nobody is permitted to disturb the cosmic order as is determined in the Word, and go unpunished, no matter how noble the reason may be. It was an unnatural external interference in the internal affairs of Earth that negated the law of cause and effect. By putting Satan out of the game he had been denied the right to repayment of all the evil and selfishness of humanity by means of terrible suffering to which he would have subjected us.

The consequence of this interference was that all the beings that were responsible for the deed had to repay all the debts of mankind so that Satan would have nothing more to collect. Only when this consequence was accepted and paid could the interference be justified. Not only Jesus, but all the beings in the whole universal convergence were tortured and beaten with Him for having been involved in the interference. The principle of a convergence in the mutual participation in all experiences; it can perhaps be compared to the convergence or unity of all the cells in a human body that all have a separate function. The one consciousness 'man' is the harmonious unity of all the organs and limbs, and when one part of the body suffers and excruciating pain, then the other parts suffer along with it.

Thus directly were billions of individuals involved in helping us, and were just as involved in the suffering of Jesus. It was the God *Christus Unitas Universitatis* that hung on the cross and thus paid off the total debt of mankind. We all owe a great deal of thanks to a great many beings. Since then Christ has the power to forgive us for nearly all our sins; we owe Satan nothing unless we chose directly for him (identify with him).

Satan's power is described in the same chapter of Luke. He took Jesus up to a high place and showed Him all the kingdoms of the Earth with the words "All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me and to whom so ever I will, I give it". Jesus did not deny this right, it was true, and when this 'Gentleman' is again free and becomes man we can expect a spectacular demonstration of his power.

The Son with His hands tied.

There He was, a lonely God-man in the midst of His people who did not have the slightest idea of what had happened, and even less idea of who He really was. He could not tell these people that He was Godly, because then He would have broken their laws and have been put to death as a blasphemer; the Torah says that the Lord God is the only God.

In the normal transformation process, the Son comes in the last phase when everyone has reached the highest level of development and all know exactly who He is; is then the King of love and there He does not die.

On Earth, He had to die, not understood by the majority of His people. He could only

speak in simple terms and make comparisons without revealing the real truth, which meant that His teachings would only be understood much later. He was born in a time when only a small percentage of the world population existed so that for the majority He could only be a tradition. He could not begin a comprehensive world religion because then He would have made use of His advantage over Satan. The result of all this is that the majority of humans still live in doubt of His true identity, and what for Him must have been the greatest sorrow was that even His own people, after all the predictions, did not recognize Him.

The Jews can hardly be blamed for seeing Him as a blasphemer, He expressed Himself in such a way that the truth came out rather muffled. He attempted to keep many of His wonders secret by forbidding His pupils to speak of them. When we see the situation in which the message in the Bible has landed in comparison to the power of egoism, money, sex., nobody can say that Jesus has taken advantage of His lead on Satan, on the contrary. This conclusion is essential in demonstrating that the freedom of choice of humanity has not been damaged in any way.

We have now been in absolute isolation for nearly two thousand years. Mankind is alone, nobody interferes with us because our future is sure, nothing more can go wrong. There is no God or Satan who comes to disturb our arrogance; we do not wish to obey? We know everything better? O.K., we can have our way because our freedom is sacred. The pity is that it will soon be over, because the appointed time for the release of Satan is close; the human in which he will manifest himself is already born, and now we are just waiting for the destruction of atheism. Humanity will have to be prepared for this; the message in the Bible will again be told, but now with greater conviction and, when necessary, with proof. This is permitted so that the struggle can be fought with equal weapons, and no longer with an opponent that is deprived of his power. Now it will be a fight to save people from the fall into eternal death.

Satan's incarnation.

So far, four of the five restrictions to the incarnation of the Son have been described, a fifth remains so that Satan still gets the full chance after his return from banished. This means that he will be given the chance to overpower the Earth and to mislead as many as possible into choosing for him instead of for God. This may give the impression that he is also aided by the destruction of atheism, because only someone who knows God can reject Him, but this is not so. He continues to. deny God, and lets humanity choose for power, profit, and the exploitation of others, and in the form that he offers. He wants people to choose him, and all the advantages that he offers, but not against God because that would be too obvious. He want them to worship him, and only him and goes to work with lies and deceit. He aims his campaign at the evil in man, free sex rape sadism, etc. but above all at laziness and profiting from others. He knows better that anyone that our Achilles heel is laziness which does not lead to the development of new talents, and that is what he uses almost exclusively. He denies that a failing being chooses against God, he does everything he can to keep God out of the question, because if he did not,

many would perhaps think it over, and that is not intended. Let the people choose for a lovely lazy sensuous life, full of fun, that is the system. When the destruction of atheism actually takes place on a large scale, he will no longer be able to use his backdoor tactics and will have to show his colours; then he will direct his actions against God and Christ and everyone will know who he is.

Satan is an utmost intelligent 'human' being with an unknown magnetic personality, an hypnotic leader who can do things that we do not think possible, such as recovering from mortal wounds. In the Apocalypse it states that the beast will manifest itself in the beginning as the idol of the masses and that millions will follow him in wonder and admiration. This could be true, the antichrist looks for wonder and admiration. This following of an idol will be mostly by young people before their second awakening who do not have any ideals over God or Christ, they do what the fancy tells them because they are bored. This is also true because the antichrist has the most power over the youth, they are defenceless and still living in their body egos, and have not yet developed their individuality enough.

He will take over the world in an unexpected way and a second bloody cultural revolution will begin that will honour the talent-less. Top leaders and intellectuals will repent their 'Sins' in public and will be set to sweeping the streets. Their property will be given to the 'poor', but not the real poor, to the talent-less who will have all the top positions. Their lack of talents is masked by red tape and the frantic issuing of orders, but this does not prevent industry and food production going to pot which results, among other things, in a gigantic famine.

The propaganda machine will be running at full speed, through which the antichrist will gain the reputation of the great reformer, the even greater saviour, and the champion of the oppressed. He speculates and manipulates with jealousy, this is the main point of recognition in his actions.

He will choose his disciples, mostly young people who he will lavish with his favours. The universities will be full of zealots, but they have to be taught to really live. This 'real' life is then power, sex, money, slavery, and especially, not working. They have the 'donkeys' to do the work. They will be stimulated to convert' heretics by means of terror and an escalation of violence will be started that destroy the existing constitution. Murder, robbery, abuse, rape, and especially deflowering are the order of the day.

This chaos is combined with their second plan of campaign, namely a personality cult, and humiliation. Everyone will be forced to worship an image of the antichrist, and anyone who will not do this at first will be ostracised as a pariah along with his family. They will not be given the ridiculous badge, and will therefore be unable to buy or sell anything and at the same time they loose their salary and work.

They are condemned to die of starvation. The system works with satanic perfection because it creates hate within the family. Everyone comes to the person involved and try to convince him that he should be sensible and not subject his family to this humiliation:

If he remains stubborn, then the trouble really starts and the drama is brought into the home; he may even be betrayed by his family, tortured, and killed. (See Mark 13.12)

This will not happen because the antichrist demands it, he is not that foolish; it would then be his fault, and that is the last thing he wants. It will happen because egoists cannot accept that someone refuses to undergo the humiliation that they must suffer. The people do all this to each other, the antichrist does not dirty his hands with such things, he regards the people with an air of superiority and ignores the murder and torture, he simply rewards 'good deeds'. The world will be made insensible through the television, his film teams will report interesting events and then the people will be selected who have done a 'service' for the community. They may come to his palace and are decorated with all the necessary pomp and circumstance. This is the way in which the false saviour dangles his bait above the pit of everlasting death.

Is this the exact way in which this will happen? No, that is not possible. One who foretells the future, changes it. The very fact that this description exists and is published, even on a small scale, means that even if he wanted to do it this way, he would now have to modify his plans. This description is composed by beings who know his character because this is the same on all the planets; it therefore describes only the methods of Satan, and not the exact plan of action. Our problem is that he knows mankind, and exactly how he must manipulate us. As the Bible tells us, it all comes down to constancy and courage. Who tries to save his life will lose it, and who loses his life for "ME" will keep it.

The final phase selection.

From this description of this immortal individual, it will be clear as to why he can only be allowed to appear in the end period of the development. It can only last about four years, otherwise it would have compromised the free will of humanity, breach of faith or not. To explain this, the selection in the last period is a selection of completed identity. A human needs a period of identity formation from puberty to at least 25 years and this means 10 years, but usually much longer. During these ten years is determined whether he has developed enough talents to attain an immortal individuality. If Satan was allowed 10 years in power he would be able to form a great number of young people into talent-less beings. Since he does not even get the half of this time, all he can do is to allow the already present talent-less beings to enjoy themselves and irrevocably establish their identity. They know the choice they are making for the antichrist because they feel attracted to him. Thus he gathers all the Satan’s disciples together that especially in the end phase are present in large numbers. As will be explained later, they are present out of all time (earthly time) and found their formation in previous lives. The principle is that no 'new' beings may be mislead, with or without pressure, because then their freedom of choice would be compromised. The people that we are talking about here are beings that have inborn laziness as a talent, and an evil disposition that their parents and teachers were unable to control. The real humans who have completed the talent mix process by work and effort and have an immortal soul will not fail in the

sense of everlasting exclusion. No matter what they have done, all guilt is finite and therefore can be repaid, even if the method causes a great deal of suffering. When anyone succumbs to the threats and worships the image of the antichrist, they will not take part in the first resurrection, but in the second, and will have to refute their identification with Satan, with all the associated misery. No one can escape the suffering because it offers the satisfaction without which eternal happiness cannot exist.

The great majority of the 'lazy' will, living or dead, complete the previously described development process in the realm of the dead, and this will take about one thousand years after the disaster. In the Bible, God said that: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm and neither cold or hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth. We have covered the "lukewarm" and the "cold" beings, but who are now the "hot" ones? These are the people who are in advance on the final convergence and have already irrevocably determined their Christ identity. As a rule these are people who have given up their lives rather than deny God or Christ. They will take part in the first resurrection and in the thousand year kingdom of God and Christ on Earth.

During the Christian and Jewish persecutions, many people gave their lives and therefore confirmed their Godly identity. The end of time will emerge as a selection period in which not only Satan, but also Christ will gather chosen ones together.

The disaster of fear.

In fact, Satan gets the first chance. It is true that Christ was here on Earth first, but due to the many restrictions, no one can say that there is any comparison with the brute violence of the antichrist. No one can be blamed for having failed in his first confrontation with the monster, they will get enough chance to confirm their Godly identity in due course. Firstly, an end must be made to the chaotic situation on Earth, and this 'clean-up' will take place in such a rigorous manner that it will mean the total destruction of all human works, and the equalization of the surface of the Earth as if a great bulldozer had gone over it.

There will be literally nothing left standing. Actually, it will be the antichrist who pulls the trigger; his terror causes disorder, chaos, and fear. Seeing that the human race is complete and that the dead, by their involvement with the living, will share that fear, a unanimity in fear will exist, even though it is not yet a total unanimity. For example, Satan and his power drunk band, and Christ will not take part. This is a good thing too, because an almighty fear would destroy our solar system.

The fear must be just large enough to enable humanity to pull the trigger which will cause a pole-shift of the Earth, and the entry of a narcotic fear that will insure a quick and merciful end for all humanity and animals. The disaster will not come unexpectedly for the real humans; in fact, they will have prayed for a long time that God will make an end to all the terrible evil surrounding them. Every straight thinking being will long have made up his mind that the end is in sight, and many will calmly let it engulf them in their great respect for God.

Another process will begin during these last days, namely the continuance of the reflection life on Earth by which the chosen ones of Christ from earlier times will rise out of the dead and, as promised, will be 'taken up'. This impressive spectacle will be described further in the next chapter. The sign of the Son of man will appear in the clouds above the burning Earth as the sign that the new time has begun. The time in which Christ will rule over a new kingdom of peace and justice that has begun on Earth. Satan will be imprisoned for a thousand years; the changing of the guard.

For a biblical verification, see: Apocalypse 13, Matthew 23 and Luke 21.

Conclusions.

What is the point in predicting a disaster?

Rubbish, it is exactly the same thing as a doctor telling a woman that she is pregnant. Humanity is pregnant with the new eternal life, and what is going to happen are just the birth pains of the new life. Man is destined for a future that surpasses our wildest dreams. All the suffering that is born in obedience to God's will is a part of a purification process by which we drive out our demonic ego. In other words, that suffering is discounted from the rest. One who accepts the suffering experiences happiness instead of unhappiness, they improve their mentality much easier now because it has three times as much effect before the resurrection than after.

We will have to be told that we are pregnant, otherwise the pains of the last time will only cause a panic situation that will lead us to the conclusion that humanity is doomed and that it is impossible for a loving God to Exist. It would all be pointless if it did not have the effect of purification. For enlightened beings, it is extremely meaningful. At the top of the fanatic hysterical explosion of hatred for God, God takes a hand with a show of power that leaves a devastating impression behind it. Even as the disasters begin, there will be many who will wish to bite off their tongues for the fact that they worshipped the antichrist. We will be shaken awake, perhaps too late to realize that we have been following the wrong path. This impression during death will be of great value as purification in the coming thousand year kingdom.

Only the disciples of Satan, who are not 'pregnant' will see this as a prophecy of doom, for them it is the prophecy of eternal death, and they will want to hear nothing about it.

It is therefore very important to realize that at the summit of their terror it is simply a matter of choosing for or against Christ, and no longer for life or death. Saving of a life is just a matter of postponement for a few months. "He who loses his life for "ME" shall find it".

The incarnation of Satan can be understood fairly simply.

1. The origin of the universe is in the infinite All-consciousness that can only manifest itself in contradictions(see first chapter).
2. The true goal of the creation is love, and this needs at least one partner.
3. Then this partner must always have existed in the infinite, and must, according to

point 1. exist out of contradictions in character and nature.

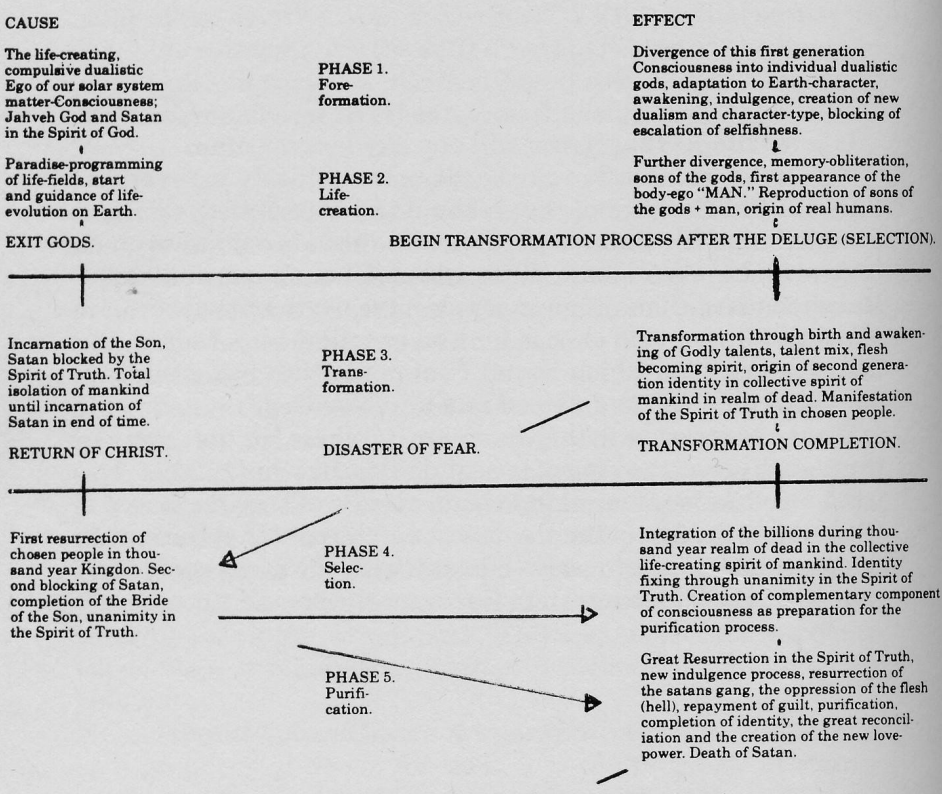
Ergo, the Son had an infinite origin and was therefore indestructible, namely, Satan. If the Son were to become man, and Satan not, the freedom of choice of mankind would be destroyed without which, perfect love is impossible. Beings would then exist who felt affection for Satan, but who would not be able to follow him in order to perfect their anti love-power.

End-conclusion:

It is inevitable that Satan will one day become man.

Yet another conclusion can be taken from this. If, in the end of time, all the disciples of Satan should be incarnated, then the completion of the Satan's portion of mankind could take place (this will be explained). What about Christ's portion then? Hundreds of millions of good people have never known Him, let alone that they could choose for him or follow him. Indeed, the many restrictions which bound Him made Him just a shadow out of the past, misunderstood and unrecognised.

What a contrast with the other planets where He, according to the plan, lives as the king of love and rules the whole planet. The freedom of choice of mankind would also have been destroyed if Christ were to remain the shadow out of the past that the majority of us did not know; so we can say with the same conviction that Christ will also return to Earth for the second time.


CAUSE
EFFECT
The life-creating, compulsive dualistic Ego of our solar system matter-Consciousness; Jahveh God and Satan in the Spirit of God.
PHASE 1. Fore-formation.
Divergence of this first generation Consciousness into individual dualistic gods, adaptation to Earth-character, awakening, indulgence, creation of new dualism and character-type, blocking of escalation of selfishness.
Paradise-programming of life-fields, start and guidance of life-evolution on Earth.
PHASE 2. Life-creation.
Further divergence, memory-obliteration, sons of the gods, first appearance of the body-ego "MAN." Reproduction of sons of the gods + man, origin of real humans.
EXIT GODS.
BEGIN TRANSFORMATION PROCESS AFTER THE DELUGE (SELECTION).
Incarnation of the Son, Satan blocked by the Spirit of Truth. Total isolation of mankind until incarnation of Satan in end of time.
PHASE 3. Trans-formation.
Transformation through birth and awakening of Godly talents, talent mix, flesh becoming spirit, origin of second generation identity in collective spirit of mankind in realm of dead. Manifestation of the Spirit of Truth in chosen people.
RETURN OF CHRIST.
DISASTER OF FEAR.
TRANSFORMATION COMPLETION.
First resurrection of chosen people in thousand year Kingdon. Second blocking of Satan, completion of the Bride of the Son, unanimity in the Spirit of Truth.
PHASE 4. Selection.
Integration of the billions during thousand year realm of dead in the collective life-creating spirit of mankind. Identity fixing through unanimity in the Spirit of Truth. Creation of complementary component of consciousness as preparation for the purification process.
PHASE 5. Purification.
Great Resurrection in the Spirit of Truth, new indulgence process, resurrection of the satans gang, the oppression of the flesh (hell), repayment of guilt, purification, completion of identity, the great reconciliation and the creation of the new love-power. Death of Satan.

PHASE 6. Completion. CHRIST, the new God, the all-encompassing Ego (I am) of the completed humanity through their unanimity in love-will and thoughts in the Spirit of Truth.

PHASE 7. Fulfilling. Almighty Will of the completed CHRIST. Appearance of the complete absolute character of the SON. Uniting in consciousness, release from the material body, collapse of the solar system, entrance into a new immortal life. The new Earth, marriage of the Lamb, first convergence to final individuals (angels), reconstruction of the epic of Man. The glorious fulfilling of the WORD in CHRIST.

Scheme 2. The fulfilment of the WORD in CHRIST. The seven phases of creation, together with the three (final Persons of the secong generation consciousness; The Son, Christ and the Spirit of Truth.

CHAPTER 7

The Completion of Humanity

The Incarnation of the son.

The Origin of our (ego)-identity is the smallest fraction of talent, a divergence of the character of an Archangel. By means of the mixture of talents we anchor this transformation-original in the earthly character.

Now a very rough estimate can be made to establish how small a person is in relation to the absolute character of an Archangel, at least, when we know their number. Well, that is around 70,000. If we estimate the total world population of all time as approximately 8-10 billion completed lives, then it follows that an absolute character needs more then one hundred thousand human lives to become completely human. The numbers are meant only to give the reader some idea of the size.

In addition, the earthly character was only a part of the All-character, a particular configuration, so it can safely be assumed that the total would have been far in excess of 100,000 if it had concerned complete absolute character.

How then can the absolute Character of the Son become a completed person in one man-Jesus of Nazareth? The forgoing explanation was necessary in order to make it clear that this was impossible. Even if the total number of Archangels had been drastically different then there would still have been many hundreds of thousands of people needed to transform the Son's Character completely.

In one life that is out of the question, a person is too small for that. The Bible mentions the number 144,000 and from this it follows that the Son must live that many times as a human.

From the gigantic operation which Jahwe must have had to set up, just to achieve this one Incarnation, it follows that for these other Lives there must be a similar procedure possible. This procedure begins with normal people born from normal parents who, through their calling, lead a life of extreme obedience to God, have a large amount of purity and who have more or less completely harnessed their bodily lusts. In short, a life in which the demonic has scarcely manifested. When such a person is completely purified after the purification and redemption and has a large amount of love for Christ, then he/she can ask the Son to take possession of him/her. Thus but only on the basis of an urgent request-the Son can take possession of a chosen one who from that moment on also has the SELF-awareness of the Son.

This unity in Being of the Son and his chosen ones the Bible calls the Marriage of the Lamb. The name of this defenceless animal is the symbol of the defenceless perfect Love-character of the Son and the word 'marriage' here is the symbol of the unity in spirit and soul.

The bride of the Lamb is the 144,000 chosen ones in which the Son will become man.

They are virgins; men and women of a normal disposition who have lived lives of celibacy and purity as a great personal offering to Jesus Christ.

This small group will consist of people who have lived in the Spirit of Truth (the power of recognition of Jesus Christ).

If it can be this way, then why the huge Intervention of Jahwe?

If the Son had not first come on earth through a pure birth then there could never have been people who followed Him. He had to be there first before the possibility of recognition of his Identity, the Spirit of Truth, could come.

This reveals the second and third reasons for the coming of Jesus Christ. The first was the blocking of Satan and the second the sending of the Spirit of Truth Who could only come when He had been here. The third reason which follows on from this, is the calling of his chosen ones. This calling happened through the Spirit and was based upon a very special selection.

The composition of this group is not arbitrary. Their attained talents seen together have to be a particular configuration which is a reflection of the earthly character. It is thus clearly a calling and not a competition. Nevertheless, many are called but few are chosen. The required level of polarization is a level of holiness which can only be attained after a heavy struggle and for which a strictly ascetic way of life is required.

After the marriage they are one with the Son, exactly as Jesus was. Then there will be no division of being any more between Him and the 144,000 others. They will all converge into one Person who will then be not only the opposite of egoism but also of impurity. The 144,000 have acquired impurity and are as such the armour of the Son Who is defenceless against it. Therefore the Son of Man will be symbolized Cosmically as a Person of gigantic size Whose hands lie on the hilt of a huge sword whose point stands on the ground. It symbolizes his defence against the satanic sabotage and destruction which can only be checked with force.

The Normal Cycle of Other Intelligent Races.

The assumption which comes up is that the new life after the catastrophe comes from the life-and love-power-of the Son and that here, now, the new identity will come into existence. That is most emphatically not the case.

The thousand year Reign is fundamentally a part of the transformation-process and takes place in the old reflection life.

In the normal cycle under divine Guidance, through the high level of polarization the Son would be called naturally. In the final phase He is the King of Love Who brings His people to perfect Love and the new life. Just after that comes Satan with his gang to lead the people astray and test them. There he must be called through a special intervention and that happens precisely the other way round. Both the coming of the Son and that of Satan take place in reflection-life as a necessary phase of the transformation process. Only their presence can bring the recognition into existence and secure the free choice of

the people (individual identification).

What are the deviations from the normal cycle in an own-boss race such as the human race?

To begin with, not only the Son came prematurely, but the antichrist, Satan did too. Normally He Comes at the end of the reflection-life, at the completion of the love-power and that is the time when He absolutely must be there, otherwise it doesn't work. (From this it follows that Satan must also come back again).

Further, it is abnormal for Satan to appear in a race who has not yet reached immortality. Normally he does not actually get the chance to live out his lust for murder. The second time he doesn't get the chance either, then we will be immortal.

The most fundamental difference is actually the Resurrection itself.

In the normal cycle no resurrection of real people takes place at all, only the natural rebirth (reincarnation).

Going ahead to a later explanation it can be said that there the selection takes place in the kingdom of death, through which the reincarnation-selection comes to exist.

In this cycle the weeds will be constantly pulled out and the quality improves. The level of polarization rises continually and then one and the same person can reach completion through successive lives, learning by experience.

Also through the low population growth the moment will come in the final phase when *all* people are living-also those from previous times in history. Under the leadership of the Son and through the natural all-might of this completed humanity suddenly the might of the collective Spirit over matter will come into being and with that, immortality. Reincarnation takes the place of Resurrection.

The only ones who rise from the dead there are the members of Satan's gang, but again through the natural all-might of the group. There the closed system of planetary-consciousness will never be broken by an outside intervention. Under the leadership of their God they are supporting.

The Coming Outside Intervention in Our Right of Self-Determination.

A little further back it was established that Jesus was the First of the 144,000 and thus it followed that within the closed system of earthly-consciousness He cannot be almighty during the catastrophe because humanity is still far removed from unanimity.

At the same time it can be assumed that during the catastrophe two almighty Interventions are needed. The changing of the guard has come and now Christ will take over the ruler ship of the world from the antichrist.

The Kingdom of God is a Kingdom of peace and justice and only those who already carry the kingdom within them can take part. That is not only the 144,000, but also the millions who have irrevocably chosen for Christ and are prepared to recognize and obey Him as their King: the first chosen ones.

That is what they must live for. A part of them will be saved during the catastrophe and the other part will have to rise from the dead and that will happen, as stated earlier, immediately before the catastrophe. This will be the first Resurrection and for that an almighty Intervention is required.

There is someone else who will survive the catastrophe because he is immortal, and that is the monster with his vassal, the spirit of lies. They will have to be seized by the collar and locked up during the thousand years which is allotted to Christ. For that too the all-might is required.

It follows then that again an outside Intervention will have to take place through the already completed intelligent races in the united SELF-consciousness of the *Christus Unitas Universitatis*, the Unity of the universe.

As the Bible explains it the Son of Man shall come again in all his Majesty attended by all his angels. In other words, He comes as the almighty Christ Who puts things in order. He will restore peace in the earthly balance of power and create a living-place for his chosen ones.

The consequence of the first outside Intervention was that a second inescapably has to happen, so that these two stand more or less in each other's line.

The price of this second blocking of Satan was already paid, for this convergence in Christ has paid off the quilt of all humanity. Apart from the catastrophe still more striking occurrences will take place on this earth which will be seen by those living then.

The consequence of the 'own boss cycle' on earth is that here at least four outside interventions must take place and these weaken our self-determination bit by bit.

1. The blocking of Satan twenty centuries ago, which took place through the incarnate Son with help from many other intelligent races who had already reached completion. (Blocking for a particular period).
2. The general destruction through the natural catastrophe of fear, the mechanism of which was built into the earthly consciousness by the Spirit of God.
3. The first Resurrection of the chosen ones to the reflection-life 'from the Spirit' (immortality through Spirit over matter). This again takes place through the incarnate Son with help from many other intelligent races.
4. The second blocking of Satan for a particular period which will happen after the catastrophe and again through or in the name of the incarnate Son with help from other intelligent races.

What a trip with such a pig-headed race!

I want to explain that these interventions will not affect the freedom of choice and the character of humanity. At least not as far as it concerns the real people who are going to make it and that is about 99% of humanity.

The remaining percentage of Satan's disciples will certainly not be part of it. The

principle of the violation of our right of self-determination is based on the limitation of Satan's freedom of movement as soon as he wants to destroy the freedom of choice of real people. He is a saboteur and a terrorist who wants to conquer his victims in order to make them will-less.

The first Intervention of Christ was the saving or deliverance of all people from the unhappy predestination which came from the planetary conditions.

It was the saving from the fatal fall of Satanic overpowering which would have completely destroyed our right of Self-determination. It was not an attack, but just the opposite, a complete guarantee of our right of self-determination and of free choice. The proof has been given in the meantime. For the last twenty centuries no-one from 'outside' has meddled with us. Our freedom of action was not affected.

The second and fourth Interventions are along the same lines. The catastrophe of fear will intervene at the peak of the terror of Satan and just before the moment when he will attack our freedom of choice. After that he will have to remain blocked for a certain time so as not to affect the freedom of the chosen ones in the Kingdom. Here too the guarantee against attack on our right of self-determination.

The situation regarding the third Intervention is less clear. The Resurrection of the chosen ones and the foundation of the thousand year Kingdom can be explained as an attempt at one-sided influencing of all the living and dead. If Satan is allotted only three and a half years and Christ a thousand years then it begins to seem that the freedom of choice of people *will* be affected. It only seems that way. Later in this chapter it will be explained that this choice is not free for those people, who know both the Son and Satan. He who knows the Son can never again choose for Satan.

The Postponement of the Second or Great Resurrection.

There is yet another problem. At no time can humanity die out completely, thus also not during the catastrophe of fear because at that time they will be completed in number (among other things). In death humanity has the unanimous wish to live, thus for the Resurrection. Since the whole of humanity is almighty in total unanimity the complete or great Resurrection will be carried out spontaneously and through that all real people will be living again. This will block the coining of the Kingdom, for that is only possible through selection.

Therefore there must be a significant group of survivors who do not share the unanimity of death. This is the reason that the first chosen ones as far as they are living, will be rescued by an external intervention by other races (they will be picked up by 'angels') according *to* Christ's promise. The chosen ones who are already dead will rise from the dead just before the catastrophe and will save themselves because they are immortal. Thus there are a small number of people living now who will not see death ever. The phenomenon which will take place on earth is thus a postponed great Resurrection. The first small Resurrection blocks the great one in which the billions will rise.

This puts still more emphasis on the choosing of the first group, and this while 'selection'

is still a dirty word on earth. All people are the same, so what is there to select? Because these people by chance have been brought up as Christians and what is more have been called-which they did not deserve?

It seems like discrimination!

Without knowing it you are expressing one of the most common lies of the spirit of selfishness: selection is unjust. This is no accident, for in a self-willed race the spirit of lies is dominant.

How are people the same? Like cups and saucers? There are no two people who are the same or equal. Our right of existence *is* variation, the inequality which in the convergence leads to expansion of consciousness. To God there are great and small dead (Revelations 20,12) and that difference will be decided by the number of talents acquired, their works and their labours or achievements.

The anti-performance figures think satanically and hold capacities and talents in disdain. That is their freedom of choice but don't let it worry you. Your own value will exist in all eternity from the value-consciousness of your performances. You are what you do in this life forever.

If you send a football team for the world cup then you send a selection of people with talents in football. Is that discrimination? The team which forms in the thousand year Kingdom for the training and the match will play in the world cup for the whole of humanity, and against an extremely experienced and refined opponent. It is their old physical self, or Satan. They must win: it is a matter of life and death. The billions of dead who wait for the second Resurrection are the spectators who sit in the stands. They are, as has been said, really there.

The Manifestation of the Spirit of Truth.

Humanity can be described as a second generation of Archangels who will form a second God in more or less the same way as the First. Just as with the Archangels, we will not be admitted to this process as a favour; on the contrary, we are the creators of a new Consciousness. In spite of all the outside Intervention we still have the whip hand.

Therefore Christ does not force us but He gives the direction, for He is the Way. No man comes to the Father except through the unification in his Consciousness. His Law is not meant to keep us from emancipation, but to make us free in obedience.

There are many people who feel that obedience is simply lack of freedom and that only complete lack of restraint is freedom. It is the greatest folly to suppose that in this universal system lawless people could walk around free. They would create the greatest lack of freedom imaginable: chaos.

A simple example: purely technically we are free to drive with a car to Peking, if necessary. This freedom exists because the great majority of road-users obey the rules. If they were lawless and drove on the right or the left at will, without obeying a single road-sign, all road traffic would be impossible. The chaos would rob us of that freedom.

Freedom exists only through obedience. Many examples could be given-the football mentioned earlier would also not be possible without obedience to the relevant rules of the game. Obedience to rules, or a Law, creates team-spirit, the shared direction of purpose through which the group is free to do a particular activity.

The team-spirit in the thousand year Kingdom also, through obedience to the Law, creates direction of Purpose. Thus the group attains the freedom to create a new God.

This team-spirit is nothing less than the Spirit of Truth, since this is precisely his objective, He is the Objective of the Son, as the Spirit of God is the Objective, or the Word, of the Father.

Originally they are the power of recognition of the Father and Son respectively but they manifest as the executors of the Objectives. The Word also embraces the Objective of the existence of the Partner, but exclusively with the intention that this part will be delegated to the Spirit of Truth. Thus the Spirit independently takes over the execution and thereby takes command of the all-might, as predicted in the Word.

Where does this second-generation Spirit come from exactly?

Since both the Son and Satan already existed in the ABSOLUTE their power of recognition of their possibilities must also have existed. Then also the Spirit of Truth and the spirit of lies are originally Absolute. This is corroborated in John 14,16 and 26 and 15and 26, in which Christ affirms that the Spirit of Truth comes from the Father and will stay with us always.

This is the link with the collective Spirit of humanity described earlier, and nothing is more human than this Spirit who embraces all human knowledge and experience, the human all-knowledge. The Spirit of Truth possesses no absolute knowledge consciousness, 'He speaks all that He hears' and is therefore most simply described as the power of recognition of the Son and his Objective. What has to happen is the integration or adding of this power of recognition to the collective Spirit of humanity and only in this way can the human quality of the Spirit of Truth come into being.

How does this addition occur?

Exactly as in the ABSOLUTE, because the possessors of this knowledge-consciousness choose unanimously for the One love-objective and that means the same as the unanimous identification with the Spirit of this Objective. In our case this means that all real people without exception will identify with the Spirit of Truth and will thus have the power of recognition of the Son. This will happen during the thousand year Kingdom where all real people continue to exist, whether in life or in death. They all know then the Son and Satan, and, as said before, there is no longer a possibility for choice. They choose for the Son and through this unanimity the Spirit of Truth will have the natural all-might of this humanity. In the last phase of our process of completion this almighty Spirit will be our Leader.

The Completion of the Transformation Process.

Up to the present people have the reflection-life and the power of reflection of the infinite dualistic Love-will. We are still the receivers of the one transmitter (the Father), but at some point we will have to become the transmitters ourselves of the new life-and love-will of the Son. To that end the Father will withdraw for only then do we get the possibility to complete our transformation. It is the withdrawal of the known Angel who lives in us, the transformation-original of our personality. If the input of the transformation falls away the output (the transformed) will be independent. Then the people will still have only their acquired.

Another part of the input, the ballast, is the demon which lives in our body and naturally it is inevitable that with the Angel, also the demon, our bodily lust, disappears-otherwise we would have taken its identity (conquered).

Earlier it was explained that in the Resurrection we have a body with Spirit become flesh that just like the gods, is incarnate spirit and is no longer flesh becoming spirit. The human Spirit is then created and this must once again incarnate in a material body because the completion of the transformation takes place in the matter-bound reflection-life. As explained, this body has no needs any more, but through the spirit of this person (his memory, knowledge, experience) he behaves as if he still has his old physical self with all its habits and addictions. He can even still have his old imagined sicknesses.

Exactly the same goes for his good habits, for his activity, his creativity, his purity and love. He is also inclined to behave as if he still has his divine self. A person IS completely WHAT he has done in this life. His works accompany him for all time.

Apart from that, a person has in the Resurrection the complementary consciousness-component which he formed during the assimilation process in death, as a result of regret and remorse, as was explained earlier. Finally he has as a personal memory the self-awareness of the human all-knowledge, a sea of consciousness which already exceeds our powers of imagination. Thus it is not people who rise from the dead, but gods with an incomparably larger consciousness.

In the first place they are spirit, thoughts, knowledge, memory, habits, experience, mentality etc. They are a miniature repetition of the tens of thousands, i.e. a spirit become flesh.

This new composition of consciousness-components still has the unique and inalienable self-awareness of the individual person, but is so fundamentally changed that he must realize and become conscious anew. Only after this new awakening of consciousness can the purification process commence.

By means of this process the completion of the transformation takes place and only then is the immortal individuality of a person irrevocably established. The new consciousness with the new partner-identity and self-awareness (ego) has come into being. It will turn out to be an unplanned character variant which is unique in the universe and is the result of the chance earth-character. The impossible has then happened: a new self-awareness where all self-consciousness already existed always.

The Irrevocable Choice Will Also Be Made.

There are so many people who have not known Christ and therefore could not choose. Why is it then preordained that they will undoubtedly choose for Him? Because they have worked by chance? Is there then still a question of free choice? We have already exhaustively explained that not a single being in the whole universe who has absolute powers and talents will ever choose for total egoism, let alone for an impure egoist. He is a real snake in the grass.

The Son, on the other hand, is at the other extreme. For people who have reached the unimaginable expansion of consciousness of human all-knowledge the contrast is almost shattering. He radiates such a wave of warmth, affection and love that he who sees Him once is lost. He is a magnet with such a power that no-one can resist it. You feel every fibre of your body jumping up with a wild impulse to run to Him and at least to touch a piece of his clothing. For those who know the Son and Satan the question of whom they will choose for can never arise. It is the most attractive versus the most repulsive.

This bizarre contradiction is the big problem with the creation of the new love-power. There is actually nothing to choose, unless you do not know both Persons, but then comes the other problem that you cannot choose for something unknown. Thus the choice between altruism and egoism has fallen away and is replaced by a completely other choice, i.e. that between laziness and activity. After the love-power this is the most dominant characteristic of their contradiction.

Lucifer-Satan is lazy. He wants to rule and be served on command, but he himself will not lift a finger. He wants only other people to work for him and make unlimited profit from them. He is incredibly smart and intelligent and constantly thinks up new plans to keep them at work in order to fulfil his goal.

He is basically untalented for he refuses convergence with people who have absolute powers and talents and this refusal is fundamental to his character. He wants to rule ALONE.

The Father, on the other hand, as a consequence of His Character and Objective, wants to unite with the People who have ALL original powers and talents. In this convergence He is the Creator, the all-encompassing matter-consciousness, the Omni-Creativity which fills the whole universe.

All the occurrence of creation are enacted in His Consciousness. He is the source of all action, creativity, care, skill and learning in the whole universe.

The character of the Son in this aspect is precisely the same. He wants the convergence with the billions of intelligent races of this universe and with that the unifying with Ah transformed powers and talents. He too will be a Source of activity and creativity beyond compare. It is impossible for a talent-less profiteer to take part in this convergence. He does not belong there, apart from the fact that he cannot survive as an individual. Thus the choice between altruism and egoism will be replaced by the choice between cooperation (activity) and non-cooperation (laziness).

In the kingdom of death this choice no longer plays a part, for this is then past. Work as long as it is day, for there will come a night when no one can work any more. The one question which arises is: who is there and who is not there? Those who are there have reached eternal existence and for them the schedule is ready. As soon as they have fulfilled the integration in the collective knowledge-consciousness of the total humanity, they live with the living. They will witness, from very close by, the coming of the antichrist and of the King in the thousand year Kingdom of peace and justice on earth. Then they too will know the Son and Satan and thus the choice is made.

Therefore it is not important which religion or conviction someone has followed in this life. In the thousand year kingdom of death everyone will recognize the Son as the Way, the Truth and the Life without the slightest possibility for doubt. Then we will all be true Christians. Thus many problems solve themselves.

The Resurrection to Eternal Life.

Life in the Resurrection is, in the first instance, another awakening of consciousness of a primary ego-entity. The consciousness is expanded to such an extent that our present consciousness is only a preamble to it. In addition it has a complementary component which has come into existence through the assimilation process of the previous life, which more or less needs a separate realization process. These new Gods have a spirit which rules over matter, an embodied spirit, which is best described as the life-field or life-principle of our present body as it should be, and that will be 'filled in' with normal matter.

What do the people who have risen from the dead look like?

Apart from particularly fat or thin people they look more or less the same, but still in the beginning they are a little difficult to recognize because their facial expression is changed. In a body with spirit over matter the face reflects the still dualistic spirit of the gods, but otherwise the body is exactly as the Designer made it. The same goes for the condition. All sickness, deviation, handicap, tumours, superfluity or shortness of fatty tissues etc. are gone. They have the same body size as before, unless it was a deviation, they are clothed as in the kingdom of death and look young, hard to estimate, but mid to end twenties. They no longer need to eat or drink and need no doctors any more.

The Resurrection to eternal life certainly applied to the plant and animal world also. Their life-fields are the timeless expressions of the first generation consciousness and as such are indestructible. Thus the old paradise will be restored on earth in full glory. A sea of trees, plants and flowers cover the surface. They are materialized life-fields which make a display in immortal life with an abundance of branches, foliage and flowers. All animal species are there too and play the game of life with a thrilling abandon. Birds sing and fly with the wildest capers. Hoofed animals gallop over meadows and steppes and are hunted by predators, but these do not hurt them. It is the age-old catch as catch can. It is a joyful existence for the millions who still have to recover from the shattering experiences during the inferno of the catastrophe.

The Son of Man is their King and the first thing which he instructs them in is the greatest possible obedience to the new Law of the Kingdom. Leaders will be appointed to coordinate the various activities. Apart from that they receive grand individual tasks which have to be carried out in small groups. Jesus Christ is the ideal Leader; He is like the wind which blows all the blades of grass in the same direction. He creates a direction of purpose such as only a complete Leader can.

It is still comparable with a football team; it runs on team spirit, discipline, skill and creativity.

Then the dead will be witness to an astonishing development. They create wonderful buildings, palaces, works of art, laboratories, and observatories which have no equal in history. They make machines, tools, vehicles, electronic apparatus, radio telescopes, too many to mention. But above all they build a super-culture through their care and love for each other, through the atmosphere of friendship and the collective challenge.

It is they amazing to see how effectively people work together when do not waste their energy in selfish-activities. Everyone is productively occupied and nothing needs to be controlled or guarded.

This existence is grandiose but heavy. The Way to perfect Love begins with complete self~enia1 and only a few people can imagine how heavy this task is. They must reach the amount of self-denial which Lucifer once created through the terrible suffering and humiliation of the tens of thousands. That is only possible through absolute obedience. But Jesus will not need to give orders; the people will hang on His every word and will greet all that He says with jubilation. In the Kingdom coercion does not exist.

More information about this period was not given.

The Principles of the Great Resurrection.

As already explained, this first Resurrection is also meant as a postponement of the great Resurrection. First the Spirit of Truth must manifest as the unanimous Objective of the collective Spirit of humanity and only when all the dead also have this Spirit can the great Resurrection take place. In fact these living have the whip hand; only when they share the unanimity of death can the almighty will come into existence, which will awaken all to life.

The Resurrection itself will happen suddenly. The signal will be given by Jesus Christ Himself, through the fact that he will leave us for a short while. Humanity will then have grown up so that we are again our own boss and must do it alone from then on.

At first sight this seems like a repetition of the awakening of consciousness and purification process of the first tens of thousands. Billions of gods with an immortal body appear on a planet to realize themselves while in possession of all transformed powers and talents according to earthly qualities. A new All-soul equipped with the new love-power of the Son must reconcile Satan in order to bring them both to real existence.

Up to this point it is indeed an almost identical repetition of the creation of the really

existing Consciousness of the Father and Lucifer. But now come the differences.

Satan is no longer a pure egoist but has become a highly impure saboteur of the creation plan. He knows that he is going to die and there is no hair of his head which considers producing perfect Love by putting these new gods through a purification process.

Thus, on the one hand it is preordained that Satan is an integral part of the creation of the new love-power and on the other hand that he will not help towards it. This information creates a quite remarkable situation which results in a still greater complexity of the creation process.

What will this false and malicious character do?

He will live with his gang to avenge himself upon this humanity. On that bunch of mugs which first created the greatest possible trouble on this planet and are now playing 'virtuous.' He will take back from them what they stole from him and he does not believe that they have given up their dirty tricks. He wants to test them bit by bit.

It is actually lucky that he wants that, for then in any case he takes part in the unanimity to want to live, for without him this would never have been there. Then, for the new Resurrection, another outside Intervention would have been necessary because the almight of unanimity would have been lacking in us.

Through the Resurrection not only the billions of 'gods' appear on the face of the earth but with them also Satan with his gang who will lead the people astray. But how will this go on? With this maliciousness torn by hatred? How can this irreconcilable enemy of God and the Son ever be reconciled by us? The answer to this question requires first an explanation of the principles which lie at the base of the completion of the Satan--consciousness.

CHAPTER 8

The Completion of Polarized Consciousness

The Failed Man

The Word stipulates that all intelligent races must be ignorant during the transformation-phase. In other words, both the Father and Lucifer wished this. In Lucifer's case this is obvious; a knowing person can never choose the overpowering of this character because it would mean perpetual and pointless suffering and the greatest possible wretchedness. The Father also wished this because a knowing person would initially choose against Lucifer, rather than for the Father. An intellectual choice is always selfish, but the Father is the absolute antithesis of selfishness and therefore no man can come to Him out of selfish motivations. In other words, in this choice the intellect must be eliminated.

Even if this choice were to be substituted by another-the choice between co-operation (activity) and non-cooperation (laziness)-the ignorance remains essential. After all, a person who knows the consequences of this second choice will allow his choice to be influenced by the same motivations and will not be able to live his life to the full so that his true nature can surface: he will not have been free. Otherwise they are exactly the same motivations which held for the ignorance of the first tens of thousands.

I still cannot accept that people can be damned, unless it is beyond any doubt that they have deserved it, and who deserves eternal suffering? It is a punishment so tremendous that I cannot imagine that any criminal will ever deserve it, even if he murdered a million women and children. It cannot be a choice either, because unknowing one cannot choose for that.

You ask for the Judgement and the answer is very important. In fact it has nothing to do with the idea of "deserving it" No human being will ever "deserve" eternal happiness or suffering, it is only a question of identity.

Only Satan is damned and not because he deserved it His character and love-polarization have existed, like it is today, for eternity and this is also valid for the Father and the Son. Even They have not deserved it.

Stop thinking in terms of reward and punishment, it has nothing to do with it, the only question is "WHO ARE YOU," a particle of the Son or a particle of Satan, and that is what you are choosing for. Did you develop your talents? If the answer is yes, then at once it will be clear that the Son lived in you, if the answer is no, then Satan has lived in you.

This is the Judgement: WHO ARE YOU? and not: what have you done? That is only important during the temporary purification suffering.

According to their identity, we make a distinction between real humans and intelligent animals, which are certainly not human. They are anti-humans, maliciousness incarnate. They are anti-God, anti-love, anti-life and anti-humanity.

The fact that they must exist follows logically from the previous explanation. If the Son needs 144,000 human lives to become human, then his opposite needs at least as many. Not only the Son but also Satan called his chosen ones. Satan becomes human in highly intelligent human bodies and not in real humans. This is not a free choice either since, as the Bible says, it was already ordained throughout times which humans would participate in the perpetual death; it is a choosing, a calling. Your compassion for these people is misplaced. Only Satan is damned and with him the bodies in which he becomes human-not the ego, or self-awareness of those lives. Thus the anti-human has no immortal soul; he/she has no talent-mixture and self-awareness ceases to exist. This is the sadness when someone says that for him death is the final end. We cannot contradict him, for he may be right. This is a brilliant facet of the creation plan. Satan can never drag a human self-awareness with him to his grave. The fatal fall of creation will be irrevocably sealed.

How Do They Originate?

From the fact that this information may be published it follows that they no longer come into being. A failing person lives more than one life and eventually becomes an anti-human. The explanation begins with the crucifixion of Jesus Christ. He and his people paid for all the guilt of the whole of humanity; thus he stopped the wheel of rebirth because all people were released from their karma. Since then we are guiltless in death and no longer have to redeem the guilt in subsequent lives as on other planets. What happens then with a person who for one reason or another does not fulfil the talent-mixture? Think of those who die as young children, those seriously handicapped physically or mentally, or maybe even ordinary people who fail through the influence of their environment.

No problem: their divine nucleus must become human at some point, so they would be born a second time and, if necessary, a third and fourth time. They would then be reborn not with the same self-awareness but with the same nucleus, the same 'transformation-original'. As long as a person does not put himself outside the protection of Jesus Christ there is no problem.

When, then, is there a problem?

In Matthew 12,31 we find the following saying of Jesus: All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto man; but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto man... Who so ever speaketh against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

How strange! The murder of millions of people, including women and children, in the gas-chambers will be forgiven, but not the speaking of perhaps a single sentence? Exactly. A person is not judged by his deeds but by his views, his way of thinking, his

spirit. If, out of an inborn desire for evil, he possesses Satan's spirit or way of thinking then there is nothing to be forgiven, for that is a free and respected choice. In the parables of Jesus mentioned earlier, about the ten pounds and the talents, the lazy servant was also not judged on the basis of his deeds. It says literally: Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee. What is to say, he denied the right of God to desire of us that of our own accord we take a little extra with our unique talents.

Here the fundamental selection-criterion is defined plainly and clearly, i.e., the individual identification with the spirit of Satan. They contradict the views and the objective of God. They find good all that God calls bad, and they find bad all that God; calls good. Since, according to the divine objective, good and evil are furthering and hindering the purpose, they deny the purpose.

Your assumption that truly monstrous misdeeds would automatically be forgiven is also in wrong. The perpetrators such vengeful sins are almost always intelligent animals assessing Satan's way of thinking. The non-forgiveness of such misdeeds is then no longer relevant because these kinds of people ultimately appear to be Satan himself and he does not need to pay his guilt. Satan is the only one not required to suffer for his sins.

Someone who denies the objective of God in an outburst or under the influence of others does not necessarily have to fail. Even if Christ cannot forgive them, the person himself can retract every utterance. The only irksome thing is that he/she will have to do so in the face of Satan himself, with all the consequences of that.

To take up the thread of the origination of anti-humans again, let it suffice to point out the predestination of such a person. Through his inborn desire for evil he quickly identifies himself with the spirit of lies in his thought and speech. Thereby he withdraws himself from the protection of Christ and again becomes subject to the law of cause and effect. The wheel of rebirth turns for him, which means that he reincarnates in a new life, but now with the burden of guilt from former lives. He would then be placed in an ideal, inspiring environment and get every chance to correct himself. For the true apostle of Satan this would be to no avail; he goes from bad to worse and even his parents and teachers can do nothing about it.

Thus, the definitive identity-fixing of one and the same ego or self-awareness takes place over several lives. Since this self does not survive death, reincarnation must be understood as the rebirth of the same nucleus or soul (the transformation-original is timeless) to which the karma is added. This last is guilt, and that is the thoughts, memories and ways of thinking which belong irrevocably to Satan. The real anti-human will actually become so only in his/her last and decisive life through the confrontation with and the recognition of Satan himself.

Here an extraordinary facet of reincarnation arises. On other planets with a closed cycle, where the law of cause and effect rules in full glory, the people live many successive lives. There is no resurrection for the simple reason that there, in the last living generation of the transformation-phase all those who have lived are living. One person

then represents dozens of previous lives (slow population growth). The consequence of reincarnation is that at the end all individuals must be living. It is the same for the disciples of Satan on earth because they are subject to reincarnation cycle. At the end, and that is now, they must all be living . This means that consciously or unconsciously they are anxiously waiting for the moment when the great leader will manifest himself so that they can jubilantly take their stand by him. In this way Satan collects his chosen ones and ultimately it will become apparent that he has lived within these people.

How Many Are There and How Can They Be Recognized?

As we have said, there must be at least 144,000, but there could be more. In principal their number is unlimited because Satan does not strive after any particular mixture of talents as does the Son. Although no exact information was supplied to me, I got the impression that we can expect several hundred thousand. This sounds like a lot, but seen as a percentage of the world's population it is negligible.

The distinguishing sign of the failed man is his argumentation which comes from a particular way of thinking (spirit). They are always intelligent people who have an inverted value judgement and treat evil as good and good as worthless. They deny the value, sometimes even the existence of unselfish love, truth, duty, compassion, activity, loyalty, diligence, dynamism, self sacrifice etc. and regard them as only good for fools.

They are strikingly unpleasant people, hard and cynical, who create a chilly, irritating atmosphere during a conversation or discussion about essential subjects. They continually sow doubt and uncertainty about the meaning of our existence, the value of our being human and the meaning of love. As a rule they are emotionally disturbed and unable to love or to care for another. They have no erotic love themselves but continually seek to humiliate their partners by their way of talking, among other things. However, they conduct themselves in a very civilized way and love luxury. They are friendly only if they can gain something from it.

They have a deep contempt for Christians and a hatred of Jews. They have a strong aversion to God and his Purpose and abhor the idea that they should have anything to do with Him. Their desire for evil, which they call good, is dominant and through their argumentation they seek to damage the religious convictions of others. They are comfort-loving and lazy but become very active whenever they can profit from others, injure them or make fools of them or perform other acts of 'spiritual sabotage'. They can also be very energetic in terrorist activities. These things are written on their bodies. Their number is actually so small that the majority of people never come near such a person.

They are exclusively intelligent people, more men than women, frequently intellectuals and never fools. Satan despises a low I.Q.

'Blessed are the poor in spirit for they shall see God'.

The Chaos of the Final Stage

The brief description of these intelligent saboteurs and terrorists is intended to prepare us for their appearance. In addition to that it is also necessary to tell something of the personal relationship between the 'gang' and the antichrist, because for many this will be incomprehensible. There is absolutely no affectionate relationship on the part of the antichrist; he sets his gang to work and severely punishes disobedience. From the other side the affection does exist and he then brings the gang to the recognition and consciousness of their true identity.

In the first years of his rule he manifests himself as the successful leader with nothing remarkable about him. A great many real people will support him then because they feel that humanity badly needs this dominant leadership to bring order within the chaos. With their help, using his hypnotic leadership and intelligence, he will make the earth his subject, but in this rule he will not commit himself to his gang and will even distance himself from them somewhat.

Surreptitiously though, he will ensure that his henchmen can occupy key positions from where they can continue with the process of mental poisoning with a good chance of success.

In the meantime he knows how to keep his image as beloved leader completely intact as the bringer of the new salvation and the saviour of the oppressed-even as the saviour of the whole of humanity, for the first thing he will do when he has attained the sovereignty of the world is to destroy the arsenal of atomic weapons and chemical arms. The reason for this is clear; they can only tempt a living humanity, not a dead one, but still, he does it. This shows how completely crazy the atomic arms-race is-both God and Satan oppose it. The use of such weapons would be the greatest misdeed that an intelligent race could commit and the consequences would be consistent with it.

He will stir up the real evil in another way . His 'World Reform' contains, among other things, a globally state-controlled economic plan and, as is already known, such economies cannot feed themselves because of the inefficiency of their production. A famine will take place, with the well-known scenes of long lines of people waiting in front of empty show. The great leader in his role of saviour of the oppressed will divide the scarce food completely justly and equally over the whole world. Again this appears to be a right and noble standpoint, but alas it has a satanic purpose. With the food he wants, in fact, to distribute the hunger as equally as possible because the primary human instinct for survival will be activated, and that is by nature selfish.

What he wants to achieve is that a large part of the world's population will 'organize' from these instincts to seize extra food and precisely because of the equality of the distribution this would be, by definition, at the expense of others. Then, selfishness will have become a necessity of life on a world scale; corruption, the black market, stealing, cheating and violence will run riot. This will be the scenario in which the incarnate spirit of lies will come to rule and in which Satan's gang and their hangers-on will get the chance to indulge their psychopathic and sadistic pleasures on the 'sinners' (the real

humans). Not only the chaos but also the explosion of hatred for God will be indescribable, but in the eyes of many the great leader will not be guilty.

For many the question of why we need to know this in advance will arise. The answer of my teachers is that knowledge concerning this can considerably lessen the purification-suffering of humanity, simply because this is the first part of the great test which Satan and his gang will impose on us. On other planets there is one test, but for us, through fortuitous circumstances for the final generation, ours is divided into two parts. This suffering is thus deducted from the rest. Those who are 'lucky' and have to suffer heavily under Satan's gang can already redeem the remnants of guilt with far less suffering than after the Resurrection, providing that he/she endures it steadfastly in surrender to God's betrayal of us, and second it is necessary for us to be forewarned about this gigantic deceit.

An unknowing person who simply does not come to the idea that he is confronted with an anti-god will later feel betrayed if he was not warned in some way. The same risk applies to those who know that the coming of the antichrist is inevitable.

His methods are too refined to be seen through.

The Satanic Consciousness Already Completed in the Final Stage.

After this sketch of the situation the meaning of the passage in Revelations about the many-headed monster which will come to rule will have become crystal Clear (*Rev. 13,1-9*). It is the many-headedness of one monster and that suggests that the heads will be equal and not subordinate to one of them. That is in fact correct Satan will become human in many lives and in each of those lives, he himself will ultimately appear to he present. As a rule one person is chosen as the leader, but that is not essential. It is possible that a team will operate on earth of which the leader will not manifest himself, but it is unlikely. The principle of the final test is the final formation of Satanic consciousness. For the real humans this will come about in the kingdom of death and the Resurrection, but Satan's gang will have to form up in this time.

The formation process will begin at the moment the gang become conscious of their true identity through the recognition of the antichrist.

Thus a terrifying change will take place in these people. They will become possessed by a demonic intelligence with billions of years of experience. They possess a consuming hatred of God and Christ and want to take revenge on all Christians and Jews. Because of their intelligence they can camouflage this very well; but there will still be moments when their hatred will come to the surface. Then they will strike out with the most wretched blasphemy which would disgust even an atheist. Their hatred is so out of proportion that they can bring a sensitive person into a state of shock. Thus Satan collects his chosen ones and the final formation of this consciousness takes place.

A far from perfect humanity, of which the majority is still lukewarm will then be confronted with a perfected Satanic-consciousness, a many-headed monster without equal. It will be an uneven struggle in which many real people will fail, albeit

temporarily. It is certainly a pity, for the suffering will be considerably increased, but never mind, they will get a new chance as the gods who rise after the thousand year Reign, and there they will not fail.

This bizarre confrontation between two very unequal opponents only happens in the 'own boss cycle' and therefore cannot last long.

The Rising of Satan's Gang

The second confrontation after the great Resurrection is again between unequal opponents, but now the situation is reversed. Satan and his gang come into the arena as they are about to die. This does not mean, though, that they will be less aggressive, on the contrary. They come, as already stated, absolutely according to plan since they also take part in the unanimity of death so that humanity can awaken to life completely through its own natural power.

What will Satan actually do then? His gang is formed and the billions of real people have also irrevocably fixed their identity so that Satan can no longer overpower them. Jesus Christ and His people have paid off all the guilt of humanity so that there is nothing left for Satan to claim. Further, it is ordained that he will not co-operate to bring humanity through the suffering process to perfect Love, like Lucifer, so what is he going to do? There is still much to be done, both for him and for us.

The complexity of this process is so great that the explanation must be split into three parts:

1. These new gods have a complementary consciousness-component as a result of the assimilation of the previous life. This, together with the enormous knowledge-awareness which they possess, demands a new period of realization and indulgence, and a person cannot realize himself in unselfishness alone. Therefore he has to have not only the dualistic love will (reflection-life) but will also have to live in a dualistic environment. Therefore Satan's gang will subject them to strong temptation as part of the great test (or oppression).
2. Part of humanity will appear to be not yet free from guilt in the great Resurrection. Jesus Christ cannot forgive the contradiction to the Spirit because then He would have interfered with the people' freedom of choice. Therefore they still have to repay this guilt and that begins with the recalling in direct confrontation with Satan's gang. Satan has the inalienable right to allow all guilt to be repaid. Without that he cannot perfect his consciousness and moreover the people concerned take part in the Convergence of the Son.
3. The other people are indeed guiltless and therefore have nothing to repay, but they do still have defects of mentality, particular tendencies towards evil. They are completely what they still have all their old tendencies, habits and addictions. Indeed, this will now be recompensed through the new complementary consciousness component mentioned earlier, but they will still have to make that real. In the great Resurrection people will have to do it all for themselves, and that

implies that no new sins will be forgiven. Therefore, each time that they perform an evil act or become angry they will have to repay this to Satan's gang.

These are the three principles on which the realisation and awakening of consciousness process are based. The temptations of Satan's gang are tough and without compassion. It would be impossible for them to use force on the new gods but that deprivation will be amply compensated through their knowledge of the tendencies of our old physical selves-- for Satan himself was the one who expressed himself therein. They will set up great eating and drinking bouts in which all luxuries such as alcohol and drugs will be freely available. Those with old addictions will quickly fall through the net and then the party will begin. The methods which they will use to free their victims (to bring them back) are cruel and sadistic, but incredibly effective. An earthly psychiatrist would pale by the side of it, but that is understandable, for we do not yet have an immortal body. For those who can withstand the temptation there will be no problem as they will have nothing to repay.

The Achilles Heel of Humanity: Sex.

In the list of our old habits, sex is just about at the top and for many the trouble that this causes will be puzzling, if not unacceptable. The most natural and Divinely allowed need of people will suddenly become evil? Intercourse between man and woman is not evil and when it is for the purpose of propagation it is good, for it is a specific part of the purpose of creation, although still largely selfish. When it does not bring pleasure people should not do it-besides, bodily affection develops towards the opposite sex and that is the beginning of impurity. Food and drink are not evil either, but still you will have to overcome the need or addiction to it. All self-indulgence contains the identity of self-love. Perfect altruists, such as the Father and the Son have no trace of the need for indulgence or joy, neither do the Archangels. The only absolute character who has these needs is Satan and there-fore they belong to him. He has the right to take them all back and there is nothing and no-one who can change that.

The strong human impulse for propagation is an extra handicap in the great Resurrection. The abnormally strong experience of pleasure was necessary to make a selfish race reproduce quickly. Their number must be completed at the moment when, through his brilliant spirit, it was able to destroy itself. These are the consequences of the chance earth-character.

So, sex, alcohol and good food fall under one heading?

Certainly. You exist there, in your old habits, they have become personal characteristics. To give up wrong habits and addictions after the Resurrection will take three times as much trouble as now.

What such personal characteristics represent can be made understandable to some degree if you look at the animals. In the Resurrection the old paradise will exist again, with all kinds of plants and animals, but purely as repetitions of the life-field of the species and not as individuals. They have simply lived and constantly eaten, and these

habits have become their characteristics of beings; that is what they are continually busy with. For vegetarians that is no problem since there are plants in abundance which constantly restore themselves. F6r meat-eaters there could be a problem because death is no longer possible (immortal life). But still the carnivores, just like all other animals, are habitual eaters-so at some point you will be astonished to see a lion eating straw. They cannot give up their habits, but a human being can. He has to overcome the imprint of his animal physical self, for therein the demonic expresses itself and that is the cause of all lust. You can well understand that eternal sex can never exist. The Bible says: It is good for a man not to touch a woman... (but) it is better to marry than to burn. But and if thou marry thou has not sinned . . . nevertheless such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

Well then, the oppression or repression of the flesh is the reason why the 144,000 chosen of Christ must have lived a celibate life, for in that way they have a tremendous start on all the others. Someone who has fought his whole life against sexual desire will have only aversion to it in the death after the Resurrection, and no trace of need. He/she is then free from this most dominant need and has no need to repress it since it is already blocked. The repression of the other needs is child's play in comparison.

The Great Oppression or Purification

From this extensive discussion of the repression of the old physical needs the impression should not be that this will be the main purpose of the purification process. It is the introduction, the beginning, but still to be seen as a part of the process of realization. This part is compulsory because everyone is witness to the strong temptation whether they like it or not. During the realization process the temptation is continually present, as is the punishment. The gang functions as guard and prosecutor, and they know exactly who they need to have. Nevertheless, they have no power over these new immortal gods who possess the Spirit of Truth. The gang does not argue with them either, as they know that they are powerless-but they also know that they have the right to repossess all the selfishness in whatever way it may manifest in these gods. That repossession happens by means of a precisely outlined hellish torture until those concerned let go of the conscious mentality-defects (consciousness components) so that the gang can beat a hasty retreat. The point is that no one refuses this because he/she knows that it is irrevocably bound in with their purification. That is their directed-ness of purpose. It seems a strange, not to say bizarre, situation where an overwhelming majority who hold power allow themselves to be bullied by a false, malicious gang, but that is exactly how it is.

The actual purification process takes place after the suppression of physical need and can thus be described as the second phase. This takes place voluntarily and just at the moment when the person concerned feels that his consciousness is perfected and knows that he is strong enough to fulfil the confrontation. He can then run the gauntlet. It is a period of baiting and humiliation which Satan's gang puts them through in order to test to what extent they still conduct themselves selfishly in the heaviest stress-situations. Pride, above all, will be overthrown here. In this period of suffering and purification

people will lose their tendencies towards their old selfishness in perfect humility. "Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 18,3) Then we will have the dependence and devotion of little children as well as the willingness to recognize and obey Christ as our king. Only then shall we have cleansed ourselves from all selfishness and the purification is fulfilled.

At the same time the completion of the consciousness of Satan is fulfilled. He has then 'repossessed' all remnants of selfishness from humanity and demands nothing more. All selfishness is then back where it belongs-within Satan himself. After this period which, thanks to the massive Intervention of Christ and His people, will last ten or twelve years at the most, the people will be ready for their next and greatest task.

The notable thing about this purification period is that we have to pay back the remnants of guilt and mentality defects only to Satan and that God will never directly avenge our sins-- indirectly naturally; for the WORD is God. Another remarkable point is the data that other intelligent races have paid off pretty well the whole guilt of humanity 'for love' so that our purification will turn out to be only a fraction of that which we really owe. My question as to whether or not we have to repay this debt of honour was not answered.

The Principles of Reconciliation

It is still not yet fulfilled. The Son of Man and the human Satan are not yet reconciled and therefore the two poles of the new love-power do not really exist. As long as this has not happened the new powers and the new life cannot yet come about. As is already known, this reconciliation can take place only through love. Only love can create the real existence.

The big question is how? How can a humanity with whom love is still not a strong point, ever have enough love for a totally malicious saboteur of the creation plan, who embraces all the ill-feeling of the whole of humanity, to allow the reconciliation to be achieved?

Let me begin by establishing that this is a superhuman task and we must not make the mistake in projecting ourselves as the mortals of the present time in that process. In the Resurrection we will be gods, each of which will have all knowledge of humanity as a personal memory. We will then have all the knowledge of all scientists plus the experience of many thousands of years of humanity. Our consciousness is millions of times greater and apart from that we will have the Spirit of Truth which manifests itself as our unanimous directedness of purpose. The cleverest of our present day scientists is nothing in comparison with these gods. Intelligence plays no part any more for we will know the answers to all relevant questions in advance. Spiritually all gods are equal. In what then are we unequal?

In our emotionality and thus in our capacity for love. In that we are still the same people that we are today, and probably even less, for we will have lost a part of it. The part of

our capacity for love in which we used to express our selfishness has been closed off in the purification process. At heart these spiritually superior gods are very normal people, but it seems that the value of such people will be measured according to totally other standards than those used now. The highly educated person with an underdeveloped emotionality and love-power will seem small there, for all people will then also have their knowledge and abilities. But the little old lady with no education who has toiled her whole life long for her husband and children, perhaps even for her grandchildren, and has filled her life with solicitude and skill-- the talents of the soul-- will appear great in the divine evaluation. She has a great capacity for love and loses little or nothing in the purification process.

Are our science and technology worthless in the Resurrection? No, on the contrary, they are vitally valuable. We will have the human identity for all eternity and for that the knowledge and experience awareness are determining. Besides that, our science has a predestination which makes it part of the plan of creation as determined by the Word. Not only will we always have this knowledge as an aspect of personality, but at some point during the cosmic integration phase we will bring in this knowledge in the final Convergence. Then all our knowledge will be seen as an essential contribution to the new All-knowledge of the Son.

According to divine evaluation scientific research is good. It directly serves the Objective and forms the character and the size of our collective spirit. This is really our strong point; in this task we are highly successful.

The creation of this spirit was specifically the task of the man. So far the 'lords of creation' can be happy.

The Superiority of the Subordinate Woman

Now we come to the differences in being between man and woman. This is a precarious subject since there are masculine women and effeminate men, but that is not the point here. The point is the majority, and thus just the average man and woman. Men and women are not simply the same beings in different kinds of body, they are fundamentally different beings with different creation assignments. This is not so everywhere; other races with a closed evolutionary cycle have another division of tasks, as on Iarga, but I have outlined this as fully as possible in the first part of this book. With us the individuality convergence takes place only after the reconciliation SQ that we have to realize this atonement as individuals from *one* life, and thus as a man or a woman. Only after that can the integration take place with a number of other people who we have been 'our-self.' This is the result of the weakening of the law of cause and effect.

Fundamentally a man and a woman are two complementary qualitative parts of one person. One talent-fragment of an Archangel (one nucleus) was divided into a masculine and feminine quality so that only this man and this woman together are the perfect person envisaged by the formation. The division into man and woman is therefore by

definition temporary and from this follows the ultimate equality of man and woman.

Another conclusion also follows. If, for instance, the man is placed in a superior position by God for a particular period during the implementation of the creation-task, then that fundamental equality would weaken unless the woman is superior during another period and in the implementation of an equally important assignment. This is actually the case, for woman was given the task by God to be subordinate to her husband and this holds up to the present. Thus it follows that the superiority of women will come to exist in the future.

In fact the explanation of this phenomenon was quite far advanced, but still the pieces of the puzzle must be put together. As has been said, the human spirit and in particular the aspect of knowledge, was the task of the man. He has (on average) a higher intelligence, greater individuality and craving for research, a natural capacity for leadership and the creative fantasy which our scientific and technological development have made possible. All great discoveries and inventions are pretty much exclusively attributable to men. Throughout the ages men have viewed the intelligent and scientific woman with suspicion. Intuitively it was felt that this woman was outside her territory and as such a competitor of the man, sometimes with violent reactions.

The creation-assignment of the woman is quite different. She has to crush the head of the old snake and only she can do that because (in general) we men are unsuitable for that task. The heaviest task, partly because it has to be achieved in so short a time, is that of the woman. Satan can be defeated only with love and only with unselfish love can we kill him. The woman has a much richer emotionality and a greater capacity for love. Through her age-long subordination and thus precisely because of her discriminated position she obeyed her husband in the overwhelming majority of cases. The number of arrogant feminists is a negligible percentage on a world scale. The divine assignment of subordination will be carried out conscientiously and in the greatest way. In everything where a person obeys another in accordance with a divine task he/she remains guiltless and unselfish.

Therefore she has not only a much greater capacity for love but also a significantly greater measure of unselfishness. Through her subordinated and discriminated position the woman has become superior to the man. In the Resurrection and after the purification the average man will emerge from the struggle badly battered. He already had a small capacity for love, but after the test where Satan has emptied him of all his selfishness, pride and dominance there sometimes remains a clownish little person with a top-heavy spirit, emotionally a child but with a tremendous knowledge.

If the 'lords of creation' are not robbed of their arrogance the reconciliation will not be much of a success.

The central point of this argument is that the value of an individual before the convergence will be dictated by the extent of the capacity for unselfish love and in that, according to my teachers, the earth-woman is superior. If she is subsequently 'equipped'

with the man-made spirit then, in the light of the foregoing explanation, it will perhaps become a little bit clear why at that moment the man receives the divine task to be subordinate to the woman: to be more specific: to the present (or formerly) subordinate woman (cause and effect).

The Process of the Reconciliation

The formation of one party in the reconciliation process was discussed above, but what about the other party. What will that look like? The failed man has no self-awareness (ego) in death. There are ego-less consciousness components which seek and wait for another self to take possession of them. Their memory, with all its knowledge and experience remains, through the law of conservation, maintained within the collective human spirit and is reproducible at any time.

The fact that they no longer have a self-awareness arises from the great compassion of God for the failed man. To Satan it makes no difference, he would still have conquered them and then their egos would have been delivered to him for eternity like creatures without will. As has been said, the fatal fall of creation was irrevocably sealed. What Satan does get is the 'empty shell,' the body, back where it belongs, and the memory with the whole burden of guilt. He takes possession of these bodies so that they possess exclusively his self-awareness and character. The previous self is no more: it has been replaced by a personality participation of Satan. This process will manifest in the closing part of the final phase and therefore it is good to know something about it.

The most misleading thing about these people initially is the fact that they look normal. The horns and tail of Satan are, unfortunately, fables. On the contrary, they are often well-built people with a strong sex-appeal. We will also recognize them by their names and nick-name and they will recognize us in the same way. At first sight they are normal people from before, just like all the others. Only through experience can a real person recognize them from their faces, because the face mirrors the spirit. Their hatred is generally directed to three particular groups:

1. To Christians and Jews, but only during the final phase.
2. To people who in previous lives have led them to evil, but only when they appear to belong among the real people. On these people, who are on the difficult and tough way 'back,' they let loose their hatred in a special way-and to be honest this is quite understandable. Particularly those who have been guilty of mental poisoning via the media will have a lot to answer for during the purification process. This poisoning is actually the indirect opposition of the Spirit.
3. To their parents whom they reproach for 'having put them in this lousy world.' This reproach is certainly completely untrue; in the first place because they have lived more than one life and have still made the same choice through their unconscious desire towards evil. Second, they *have* to be there, Satan has created them.

In this last reproof lies the key to their reconciliation. They feel that they do not belong, that they are shut out. Therefore the first and most urgent demand which Satan makes of the chosen ones is the recognition of his right to exist. Directly following that the second demand is the recognition of his right to be as he is now. He demands of us that we put ourselves in his position.

Finally he requires of us the acknowledgement of his inalienable right to rule. In this list the one demand which is missing is that we must love him-this is in contrast to Lucifer for whom that was a central point. Is Satan then no longer half of an absolute contradiction which has the objective of perfected self-love? Or has an absolute character suddenly become changeable?

The answer is clear: Satan still has an un-reconciled absolute character and that is unchangeable. It exists THROUGH his counteraction.

How can Satan then have gone through a character change through which he became impure?

Where did his falseness come from, his lies and deceit, his untrustworthiness and malicious pleasure, his perversity and sadism, his love of destruction and craving for sabotage and his wish to avenge himself? In the foregoing explanation this point was assed over for the sake of simplicity, but in the reconciliation it cannot be omitted because the present character is irreconcilable. How could the Word have provided for this?

The answer is of great importance to us because without this even our women could never bring forth the love for Satan which is necessary for his reconciliation. He is the height of meanness, isn't it?

But still, the answer is very simple, at least for those who know the principle of conquering discussed earlier. Satan in his quality of the son of Lucifer, has a pure and absolute character, free from alien stains, because he is still unchangeable.4!e is a pure, out and out egoist, as Lucifer was during the reconciliation.

As explained earlier, after the death of Lucifer, Satan was possessed by his spirit and thus Lucifer lives in him as the great saboteur and as the will for revenge. It is not Satan who is to blame, but Lucifer. The first is the prisoner of the second.

Then the problem shifts to Lucifer; how can he change himself since he also had an absolute character? Not any longer. He was reconciled and actually exists. It is true that he cannot change his character, but he can change his objective, his spirit. When the objective is changed the same character manifests itself in another demeanour and another way of thinking and in this way the spirit of lies made its entry in this world.

Suddenly, with a shock, we will realize what is really happening here. Satan's disciples, the former humans, are then not in the power of Satan but of Lucifer-and that applies to Satan himself too. It appears that he is evil incarnate and that is how he manifests himself, but in fact he is the unwilling prisoner of Lucifer. For him the situation is much

more dramatic. Satan's disciples are empty shells from which the self-awareness (ego) is missing, but Satan really has his absolute and indestructible identity. He is the unwilling prisoner who does what he doesn't want to do and says what he doesn't want to say. He sits 'inside' looking with disgust at what another makes him do. A hideous and intolerable situation, especially for a complete egoist who was born to rule and for whom the unwilling subjectivity is a much worse torment than for any other character.

Why does God allow this?

The most dramatic thing about this situation is that God could not avoid it either. Even if Lucifer had won, the same lot would have fallen to him. A perfect and almighty egoist will not tolerate a second. Satan would have been the prisoner of Lucifer, out of circulation, subject to endless suffering throughout eternity. Luckily for him Love conquered and this intolerable situation will not last long, as will be explained later. Satan is the most pitiable creature in the whole cosmos.

The Great Atonement

After the collection of the loose ends the missing pieces of the puzzle will now be filled in. In the first place it is now clear why the people must be knowing in the Resurrection, in contrast to the tens of thousands. We will have the Spirit of Truth and have the whip-hand. Our opponent is vicious, but through our knowledge his lies no longer have a hold on us-perhaps a bit in the beginning when he tests our indulgence in sex and pleasure. That will be done through tough and perverse methods of temptation but although the temptation will be strong and hard to withstand, no one will be really misled. We all know where we are going and we undergo it out of free will. As long as we have the unanimous objective of the Spirit of Truth, we have the all-might of the matter-consciousness of the solar system and Lucifer's spirit can do nothing against that. The Spirit guides us.

This first purification is already the start of the great atonement. What we do there, in fact, is already the recognition of the right of Satan (Lucifer) and his gang to exist. We give back what he has a right to. This also means that the woman has the leadership but she remains as the helper of the man who takes the heaviest blows. She supports him and gives him the courage not to be despondent, for the suffering is and remains voluntary. It is now the man who must be protected. Happy the man who has always protected his wife.

After the first phase, the indulgence in pleasure, when the remaining selfish tendencies and denials must be paid for, the process will be harder but pure. Suffering is spiritual and physical, the immortal body of the gods knows strong experiences of pain and pleasure, and somehow we must get rid of the selfish-ness. No one can escape the suffering because it gives the satisfaction on which eternal happiness is built.

The members of Satan's gang will be out tyrants; initially a gang of disgusting creatures who torture out of revenge, malicious pleasure and sadism. They are devils, personality fragments of Satan, but possessed by the spirit of lies. The first thing the real women

will teach us is not to harbour hatred but to regard them as a natural catastrophe which you must allow to pass by you without complaint or emotion. In the second instance we must develop compassion and sympathy for them until, under the leadership of the women, an atmosphere of acceptance, affection and even love will come into existence. The purification is thus concurrent with the process of atonement. The remarkable point is the power of love and what it accomplishes in this violent and perverse environment. It actually creates purity.

The explanation is not simple. We have two opponents, Lucifer and Satan. We have to conquer Lucifer and reconcile Satan; the process thus consists of two phases. The first is the liquidation of impurity after which, through the all-might of the Spirit we can block the spirit of lies. So Lucifer is liquidated and Satan liberated so that for the first time in billions of years he can breathe freely again and as a result atonement can take place.

This is said very simply, but the filling in is a tremendously heavy task. The liquidation of the impurity also happens in two phases; the first is the action of the Spirit and the second the action of the soul or love-power.

First the Spirit: the new gods are knowing, they have the human all-knowledge and the Spirit of Truth. Simply because of that an important part of Lucifer's impurity will be liquidated. What then is the point of lies, deceit, untrustworthiness, breach of faith, destructiveness, murderous ness and sabotage? It has all become pointless since we no longer fall for it. The spirit of lies is broken-winged, his old elan has disappeared. What remains is the maliciousness and that is the directedness of emotions of the soul. It is the vindictiveness which expresses itself in malicious pleasure, hatred, perversity and sadism. This form of impurity can be conquered only by love. As soon as the love for Satan's gang, initiated by woman, comes into being then a great change comes about. It is no longer 'nice' to torture people who love you. The malicious fun disappears and the destruction dies down. They continue with their 'work' but now only because they want to take back that which was stolen from them. They will become pure egoists again, as before. But if they find someone who still has aversion to them, then the old elan rises again and it is 'nice' again. In this way the whole of humanity will be tested and purified until we all love.

Then once again the time will come when it will be quiet in hell. In the same way as it happened in the first purification process it will happen here; the purification is completed. The dawning of that time is also the moment when the Spirit intervenes, making use of the all-might of humanity. He blocks off the spirit of lies, and thus Lucifer. The one true Satan then appears on Earth.

The Final Confrontation

He will come as the great ruler with supreme power and majesty and, to be precise, almighty. It is the all-might which the Spirit has laid upon him and which is his due. This a repetition of the situation with Lucifer, but now in the earthly quality and on an earthly scale.

His coming causes a wave of emotions and not simply the tension for what will happen next. It is just as much a wave of compassion, sympathy and love for the most pitiable creature in the whole cosmos. He who is going to die has come, let us do for him what we can. He will be received with a wave of good will, but this will be heavily put to the test. He is a pure and complete egoist and that means that he demands that we love him. As explained earlier, in the purification of the tens of thousands he demands spontaneous manifestations of love but he 'rewards' it with hellish torture. It will certainly not be a situation of 'who dares,' but a spontaneous and massive manifestation of real love for this unhappy being. We have to pay for the privilege of being allowed to love him, just as he wants to be paid for everything. With an egoist you certainly don't get anything for nothing. We must not see this as the exploitation of his indispensability in the creation process of the new love-power. He just is that way and there is no way to change it. We have to accept and respect that he is like that. This is why his atonement is a super-human task. More than ever we will be filled with thankfulness towards the Father that he has spared us this eternal existence.

What capacity for love will we actually have then? It must already be clear that the love through which we reconcile Satan and through which the Son and Satan really come to exist is the new love-power for which we have waited all the time. Thus it is not a material reflection of the infinite Love-will. The new love-power, as said earlier: is not a manifestation of the infinite but of the All-might and that is something fundamentally different. The Son is not the infinite and manifests himself not through reflection but through fulfilment. Further, for this life no normal matter can be used because this only reflects the infinite Will and contains the identity of the first generation consciousness. Thus it can be concluded that humans then will have bodies made from another kind of matter.

Now the last pieces of the puzzle fall into place. It is the life-field or vibration-double described earlier, which is found IN our body as an exact copy of our present one. In the Resurrection from the dead this vibration-double has been 'filled in' with normal matter, but now the old matter must be disposed of and exchanged for the new. It is in fact immaterial, best described as an atomic field without the nuclear particles; the basic principle of matter, the reality behind it. The old material is inert, the new as quick as thought, invisible for our present eyes. In this new spiritual body, whose basic structure we already have, the new almighty Love-will of the Son will manifest. Not by reflection but by his expression of Himself through it. Then we will live through the Son in us (I AM the life). The principle is that the almighty Son takes possession of the new God: CHRIST, the all-encompassing Ego of the completed humanity. In order to set the new love-power in motion two almighty poles are needed; the Son and Satan, two direct opposites, for Satan is also purified. When it was stated earlier that Satan was almighty, the same applied to the Son in accordance with the law of counter-balanced creation. From this it also follows that at that time humanity also possessed the spiritual body which was fulfilled by the all-might of the Son. Then we have a dual identity; on the one

side our old body with the reflection life (first generation) and on the other side our new spiritual body which will be fulfilled by the Son (second generation). In itself that is completely logical because Satan also has this dual identity. He is and remains one love-pole of the infinite Will. It is a pity that it is all so complicated, but that's the way it is.

In this way, out of our dual identity, we reconcile both Lucifer and Satan. I was given no further information about the subsequent course of the atonement. The end-situation was described as a gigantic circle of billions of people dressed in white, where Satan sits upon his throne of glory in the focus of their love-power. He finds himself in an intoxication of bliss, for all his wishes are fulfilled. All humanity obeys and loves him despite the awful suffering he has put them through. Thus we will set the new love-power in motion not as reflectors but as transmitters of the new energy. Purified and completed, we will have become the radiation-points of the new love-power. It is finished. The Son can come.

Why Should We Kill?

You will kill out of pure unselfish Love to spare Satan intolerable suffering. I do not understand this. An absolute self-awareness (ego) is indestructible because it has already existed for all time. So we can deprive Satan only of life, but his self-awareness and his spirit remain existing eternally and with the dead he is eternally damned to be a spectator of the everlasting happiness of those whom he hates. Is that not an intolerable suffering? It is still worse than you imagine. He is not just a spectator but also the opposite of the love-pole and so he will stay for all time. He experienced the highest happiness when humanity, united in the consciousness of the Son, suffered terribly during the reconciliation. It was not so much the pure maliciousness which caused that as the necessity for counteraction. The simple conclusion which comes from this is that whenever Satan is happy the Son and His people are unhappy and suffer. Whenever the latter are happy, Satan is equally unhappy and experiences intolerable suffering.

Here you can see the gigantic problem which arises out of the law of contradiction. Unselfish beings could never be happy if another has to suffer for it, while the other is immortal and indestructible.

It is hard to understand that we are permitted to know all this at one time.

The isolation of the earth is dissolved and now we can tell the things which a man could never have thought of for himself. You do not need to be surprised for man is predestined to have all the knowledge of all intelligent races.

The solution to this problem, as set out in the Word, can be regarded as the most brilliant facet of creation. Humanity is the final form of life on earth and is thus the final form of the matter-consciousness of the solar system. Jahwe was the original-form of this consciousness. The all-might which you will eventually have at your disposal is thus the all-might of this matter-consciousness.

After the self-victory of the Archangels, the matter-consciousness was no longer dualistic, whereas it still had to be so in order to allow people to come into existence.

Therefore the Satan-Lucifer consciousness was bound to the matter-consciousness of the solar system. Thus this consciousness was irrevocably bound to this matter and there in lies the key to the secret.

The new spiritual body of man is not matter-bound and after the completion you will leave your solar system. You will have to leave it because it will disappear at the very moment when you apply the almight of the matter-consciousness of the solar system externally. This external impulse is the call of the Son, the Lamb of God, who comes direct from the bosom of the Father. He will come as the Almighty and claim his people.

You have to see this as the breaking open of the closed form of the solar system. You use the all-might of the matter outwardly and thus this matter loses its cohesion and regulation power. The solar system will then be destroyed through a material collapse, and implosion with a gigantic force and speed. All matter will pull itself together to one point, a black hole, and that happens through gravity, the love-power of matter. In a black hole the matter will be so strongly pushed together that all atomic movement will stop. Time is a product of the vibration of the atom and when that stops time will stop too. This is not the timelessness of the infinite but a complete standstill of time. This implies that when a time and matter bound consciousness is sucked into a black hole it stands still in time.

This again means that all experiences of consciousness come to a standstill, just stop, although the consciousness itself still exists. The black holes which are born of the matter collapse of a life-supporting solar system will turn out to be the material graves of the gangs of Satan of these worlds, together with all other matter-bound spirit. The characteristic of a black hole is that it never gives back what it has once swallowed, not even a ray of light can escape. In the graves lie Satan's gang and all that belongs to them in the serenity of the total oblivion of time stood still. They rest in peace.

A Suffering God

The suffering of humanity is perhaps the most incomprehensible and least acceptable facet of our existence. Many people do not understand why they must suffer and ask themselves why they have deserved it.

In the story of creation suffering also plays a dominant role, everyone has to suffer; God, the Archangels, Lucifer, humanity, the Son and Satan. Why does suffering exist? Why must the Almighty suffer too, is the all-might not as almighty as it seems?

You are thinking the wrong way. The facts say: the all-might also has its limitations. You cannot call it impossible, for no-one knows the 36,000 other worlds of possibility which the ABSOLUTE contains. In these other possibilities what is impossible now may well be possible. Therefore we speak only of the NECESSITIES which this creation includes and of those we now name two. The first is the necessity for counterbalance or contradiction and the second is the necessity for freedom as a consequence of the objective of Love. They are two implicit laws which govern the cosmos. The first dictates the necessity for the two Love-poles, from both the infinite and finite that they exits as two

absolute opposites and that means in literally everything, also their experience, they are counterbalanced. When one is happy, the other is equally unhappy, when one experiences an immense joy and satisfaction, then the other experiences an immense disappointment and suffering. This applies not only to the poles themselves but also to all beings who belong to such poles. We do not yet belong there for we are still floating between the two poles, but during the purification and the reconciliation we really come to belong to one of the two and then we take part in the suffering which comes from the law of contradiction. We do not experience this before that time.

What kind of suffering is that, physical or spiritual?

Initially it is spiritual, but the consequence is physical. We do not want to say much about this as it is incomprehensible. It is suffering through emptiness, the loss of something. Of our selfish attitude, habits, addictions, desires and other identifications with Satan. The physical experience is best described as some-thing being torn out of your body with a red-hot knife, or by an internal fire. The spiritual experience is comparable with that of someone who has just lost a dearly-loved person: father, mother, husband, wife or child. The feeling of desperate despair and abandonment, or intolerable grief which gives serious physical pain, the feeling that you are choking with sorrow and that the sun will never rise for you again. Such a person really does lose a part of himself. These are very sketchy descriptions to which you should not attach too much value. The clearest thing to say is that a part of yourself will be consumed by an internal fire.

The most important conclusion is that suffering is necessary because otherwise happiness cannot exist. Joy, happiness and satisfaction are the absolute contradictions of sorrow, pain and disappointment. In the completion, the strongest possible experiences of feeling will appear to be those which fill the whole being and are irrevocably bound to the phenomenon of love. They are creations out of nothing and exist through the power of the Word, the Objective of ALL self-awareness without exception. When you create happiness you also create suffering, the real, comprehensible suffering. The one cannot exist without the other.

If you have to suffer when Satan comes to claim his property then Satan must have suffered when you came to steal it. Satan must have suffered with every selfish deed or misdeed which real people have committed because a part of his being (existential) was taken away. He then has the right to be paid back in happiness through the suffering of the people. Normally he cashes in every misdeed and sin exactly, no more and no less, an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth. No less, for he has a right to it and no more because he would have to repay it, so even the great saboteur abides by the rules. Justice must he weighed in the scales.

The principle of the repayment of debts is compensation, at least insofar as it concerns words and deeds (sins). In principle this debt can beheld off by others if they possess the identity of the Son. Christ and His people were able, through the suffering on the cross,

to give Satan the happiness and satisfaction for everything that real people have or will deprive him of. In contrast, mentality defects can only be repaid individually because the individual must be emptied. No-one else can do that. With this some of the simplifications of the foregoing explanation were rectified.

This seems to me to be half the story, there are still people who do something good now and then. Must the Son then suffer?

Humanity does more good than evil and in all good works they will live on eternally. You are occupied with the transformation from the first generation-consciousness of God to the second, the Son. You still live the reflection life of the Father and every manifestation of unselfishness and love is the taking of a part of the Being (existential) of the Father. He also still suffers, for billions of years, because He wants to give eternal happiness, a creation out of nothing to His Son and His people. What he has prepared for us challenges every possibility of imagination. He is a God of unlimited love to whom every knee shall bow in inexpressible thankfulness.

The Completion

The final formation of the consciousness of the Son occurs in the same way as with the Father, through the uniting or convergence of three persons that is to say the Son, the Spirit of Truth and the new God: CHRIST, the all-encompassing Ego of the "new generation archangels" (humanity) through their unanimity in love-will and thoughts. This is analogous with the first ~time - the Spirit, who has become almighty though our unanimity, will call forth the Son after Satan is reconciled and slain.

In Revelations20, 1041 John describes a vision of the fantastic events which will take place after the death and unification of the anti-divine trinity, that is Satan the spirit of lies and Satan's gang (the beast) in a lake of fire. This sounds more dramatic than it is. The completed Satan-consciousness which has set the stream of love in motion has directed the love-pole completely inward and thus on the outside it is cold, but within this character rages a blazing, eternally burning fire. John describes it as a lake of fire and from this it appears that he was actually a witness to this event. A lake indicates further that the fire is limited in its periphery and burns 'within'. The fire of itself has nothing to do with the suffering of Satan for that is the way the self-love pole is.

John continues: *And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was no place found for them.*

I was very surprised to find this unbelievable fact in the Bible, and it is there word for word. Earth and heaven, the dwelling-place of saints, the first chosen ones of the thousand-year Reign, will both disappear in the coming of the almighty and in a material collapse. Their place will, in the most literal sense, never be found -- it is a black hole. In fact I am not saying anything new, so let me concentrate on a chronological account of the events.

At the moment when the matter of the solar system implodes, the people will cast off their material bodies and we will have only our spiritual bodies, filled in with the

principle of material, with which to begin the new phase of life. This new body is equally bound to the old time and place, but can travel without difficulty through the power of its spirit. We will then be invulnerable so that the force of the implosion will not disturb us physically.

We are transformed to a higher plane and are thus independent of the laws of nature, the Spirit of God. It is logical that we must be, since He is the first generation of consciousness. The only one of nature's laws to which we are subject is time, and therefore we must be in the presence of normal matter. We move to another heavenly body, the new earth, and there the great marriage feast will take place. We will have to make the journey there in the presence of matter (which creates time) and also, because our personality is not yet completed, we will be picked up in the spacecraft of other intelligent races who have already reached completion. We will be hailed as victors with many hearty good wishes.

Summary

The story- of creation in its most concise form now looks like this: The living dualistic matter consciousness of this chance solar system configuration (Jahweh and Satan) transformed itself into the new, living and dualistic consciousness of humanity. 'This consciousness was still. Then this dualistic conscious-ness divided itself into the separate identities through which all (transformed) original powers and talents, of this matter, concentrated itself in the divine part, so that this became almighty. It was the all-might of the solar-system's matter-consciousness. This part 'stepped out' of the solar system's matter in a newly-created spiritual life through which this matter lost its con-sciousness and disintegrated. The Satanic part could not 'step out' because fundamentally it did not have the powers and talents to create its own new life-form. With this matter it was 'killed' and sealed in a black hole standing still in time. Thus this indestructible consciousness will be without any experience.

Thus will all men be saved; only the anti-humans will fail.

CHAPTER 9

Cosmic Integration

The Marriage of the Lamb

The new planet which will belong to perfected humanity seems to be one of the present planets of our solar system, which fundamentally does not belong to the life-creating matter- consciousness of our solar system. This planet is-about as big as the earth and came from 'outside'. It was imprisoned in the gravitation-field of the sun when the whole of evolution, up to and including man, was already completed. It is thus an outsider which did not originally belong to this matter-consciousness. Therefore a perfected humanity will not have the matter- consciousness of this planet so that this matter will not take part in the material collapse of the solar system. Thus, out of this collapse a 'surviving' planet will emerge.

The new planet, which will be our new home, is one without an atmosphere, without water and with a glassy surface. But before we transform it into a new cosmic paradise, the great feast of the Marriage will first be celebrated.

Initially this concerns the incarnation of the Son through the uniting or convergence with his 144,000 chosen ones. However the 'wedding guests', the billions of other people, will take part in another event, i.e. the uniting or convergence of the people who have the same identity (self-awareness). This individuality-convergence needs a separate explanation.

With other intelligent races, with a normal closed cycle, the same person lives many successive lives. He is reborn with the karma, the burden of guilt from former lives, which he then wholly or partially repays. Through the continual collective mentality improvement he gets the chance to achieve guiltlessness during the super-civilization. The successive lives are also, through the burden of guilt, irrevocably bound together so that it is still one and the same person who achieves completion in the final phase. No-one will then find it hard to understand that he or she has lived several dozen, or perhaps hundreds of lives and that he/she is ultimately *one* person. For us that is much more difficult to understand. We are not yet hound to the other lives in which our own transformation-original is living. To us it is incomprehensible why one person lives in prosperity and luxury and another in misery and suffering. Seen from the point of view of one individual this chance difference seems to be the height of injustice, but this judgement will soon be reversed when such a person knows the truth.

During the marriage feast on the new earth all people with the same transformation-original (the same divine nucleus) will recognize each other with absolute certainty as themselves, as the other lives which they themselves have lived. Then the scales will fall from our eyes and we will know who we are. Then precisely the same thing will happen as on the other planets and then we will possess the individual self-awareness of dozens

or hundreds of lives. We will then be purified and perfected and thus we will have nothing more to do with the burden of guilt from former lives, which every present human has already paid for. Men and women will be united as one asexual being, the completed person, the final individual. Then too, the superiority of the woman will be relinquished, for the simple reason that the division between man and woman no longer exists.

The scales will fall from our eyes and we will see the wonderful harmony which was created by a timeless God who knows the future. Then the questions as to why we our-SELF have had to suffer so much more in one life than in another will be answered of themselves:- that sometimes in concurrent lives we have discriminated against our other self, so that we our-SELF have literally gone through what we have done to another; that, as a rule, we were confronted with the injustice committed by our-SELF which we have perpetrated in other lives; that, even so, we have met with whatever calamity or prosperity on our way which was beneficial for our forming and through which these various lives appear to have complementary characteristics. Some lives are certainly the result of the karma from other lives but there are also life histories which are not that. Indeed, every human life was an uncontrolled chance-creation: earth. During the creation God provided every human life 'in advance' with a soul which 'fits' precisely into that chance life. Thus every life seems to have a significance although we may not be able to see that yet.

Through this individuality convergence people will come to exist who are much greater than the greatest of people living now. The enlarging of their consciousness and their possibilities for experience brings the balance between their emotional and spiritual capabilities. They are no longer made too heavy by their spirit. The marriage will be a huge festival for them, where this final personality will be 'full-filled' by the almighty love-power of the incarnated Son.

The radiant centre-point of this Marriage will be the Bridegroom with his Bride. The convergence will manifest itself in the same way as in the individuality-convergence. Suddenly, two individuals who stand opposite each other will unite in body and in being. In the Son's case this will be a little different because the uniting with his chosen ones will not take place on natural ground but through the free will of the chosen. Exactly as in a marriage ceremony they will both have to say 'I will.'

This marriage ceremony will be solemnized in the presence of the millions of final personalities, in which the whole of humanity will be represented. After the solemnization the perfected Son of Man will fill these personalities with his almighty love-power and humanity will be completed. The new God will be created through the convergence of three People: the Son, the Spirit of Truth and unanimity in love-will of this second generation of archangels: Christ. From that moment they will all manifest in the One, all-encompassing self-awareness of the Son of Man, the unique, human Quality of the One Son. Whatever this unanimity wants or undertakes it can be all-mighty.

What Exactly Is an Angel Now?

The sequel to the story of creation must begin with a further description of the final personality after the completion. As has been said, they are the convergence of dozens or hundreds of human lives-let us say a hundred. A hundred men and women then form one asexual personality which will be referred to by the masculine form 'he,' and who is clearly conscious that he himself has fulfilled these hundred lives. This convergence seems to be precisely the same as that on other planets with the normal reincarnation cycle.

The final self embraces all the experiences of these lives. *I* can re-experience and contemplate every former life and then that old self again has the floor exclusively. The experience and the acquired talents are, for the most part. complementary: that is to say they fill each other out, just as man and woman do, through which I have all this experience.

Simply through this, he has a great ripeness, maturity and 'wisdom such win not he found in a single person today, apart from the ~ct that he embraces only the goodness and purity of all these lives. The total skills will exceed our 'hundred-fold-ness.'

Another characteristic of the final personality is that he has the collective facts and knowledge memory of the whole of humanity, a grandiose aspect of our future existence. As with the absolute 10,000 they have one and the same awareness of knowledge. Knowledge in unlimited multiplicity. Each final person knows all that any person has ever known and knows every detail of every human life. He knows more than all professors rolled into one. He knows every thesis, every construction and every piece of music and even the whole of world literature by heart. In knowledge they are all alike, but in their nature and character each one is unique. His unique character is the most important thing which results in a particular nature of his emotionality and love-power.

This knowledge-exponent is the divine Task of our science. Every discovery enriches the human realization of knowledge that we will cherish for all eternity as part of our unique human identity. Our being human was also determined all along. Thus science fulfils an exclusive collective task and that us recognized, directly or indirectly, by most scientists-considering their general readiness to publish their knowledge.

This pressure to publicize will not stop in the completion. An essential part of the cosmic integration process is the input of our collective awareness of knowledge in the cosmic awareness of knowledge. This last is not the absolute ALL-knowledge but the all-encompassing knowledge-awareness of the Son in the quality of the intelligent races who have achieved the completion, the Christus Unitas Universitas (the Unity of the universe). C.U.U.= Q-consciousness.

Does not the Spirit of Truth which comes directly out of the ABSOLUTE have any knowledge-awareness of its own?

No. He has the Identity of the second generation consciousness and cannot thus have the ALL-knowledge, because this is a characteristic of the first. He IS the power of

recognition of the Son and as such he preaches what he receives from the Son. As John says (*John 16,13*) 'he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he ..... .' Here also it seems that He has no knowledge-awareness of his own but that his knowledge comes from all that he hears. It is his also completely ~ the divine Partner builds up own knowledge-realization through his own experience and creativity because this knowledge also dictates the character. If he is ever able to be completely self-supporting and independent of the Father then, just like every child, he will have to build up his own experience and knowledge-consciousness. First at the Father's side and then alone.

The universe is already billions of years old and countless numbers of intelligent races have already reached completion. Therefore the cosmic Spirit has already an enormous experience and knowledge-consciousness, which is still continually increasing. Hence the designation 'cosmic integration;' with our knowledge we will take part in and be absorbed in this gigantic cosmic knowledge-realization. To that end will we learn, study and teach.

To make this process understandable I will go back to the explanation of the development in our present realm of death. In the course of time a dead person integrates in the collective spirit of humanity and finally he has the self-awareness (ego) of human all-knowledge. When he has reached that state of consciousness-expansion he lives in the living because he directly experiences every addition to his knowledge and self-awareness at the same moment. All that humanity experiences or discovers he also experiences or discovers. The fantastic consciousness of unity comes into being in exactly the same way; we are one with all people.

Exactly the same happens during the cosmic integration process. Every final person has the total knowledge consciousness of humanity. He experiences every increase of this knowledge directly and immediately. Each person therefore represents the whole of human knowledge to the full and we actually need to send only one person to another planet in order to obtain knowledge of all that is available there. At a distance of thousands of light years we know accurately and instantly what our representative experiences there. Through this connection in knowledge and thinking the dominant feeling of unity of all final people comes into existence. Through their super-communication they are constantly and automatically in touch with each other. Spiritually they are infinitely greater than the people of the present time. Through their broad-based understanding and their perfect intelligence they learn and study without difficulty, as if it were all a big game. Their memory is immaterial and faultless; what they have heard once they know for all eternity. Their awareness of truth is pure and unimpeachable.

They give the impression being turned inward and not very communicative and in that respect they remind us a little of our dead but it is Only on the surface. Their 'wireless' communication runs via an internal process and not as a rule through speech or gesture. They are never angry but they do not laugh either. To us that seems an impoverished

existence but then we do not yet have any idea of their ecstatic consciousness-experiences in which there is simply no place for this sort of expression.

They radiate a powerful force-field, a wave of warmth, serenity and happiness. It is plain to see that they have suffered but also that they have drawn a great satisfaction from it. Satisfaction is perhaps the best catchword for these beings: satisfaction of what will be achieved, the immense satisfaction through the direct experience of the Father out of the consciousness in the Son and the satisfaction about the tranquillity and certainty of their power and security. Suffering and death are conquered; loneliness no longer exists. Their whole existence manifests itself out of the all-pervading and jubilant 'we.'

Their world of existence is so magnificent that if a present-day person could observe it for only half an hour, knowing, he would, for the rest of his life, be unfit to continue this earthly existence. We still live in a more or less blocked consciousness.

How Abstract Is an Angel?

Many people feel that abstract existence in a spiritual body is worthless and unreal; a shadowy spirit world which we cannot so much as see-- a disappointing end to the story of creation.

I admit that for a materialistic person this seems far from attractive, but the judgement must come from a special knowledge of the facts. Therefore I will attempt to clarify this spiritual existence.

An angel has a body which is formed from the abstract principle of material, the atomic field without nuclear particles. To us it is invisible and imperceptible, it does not fit in with the laws of nature, it possesses no mass and no inertia, it is quicker than lightning.

We can make it conceivable to some extent by comparing it with a television picture of a person who suddenly steps out of the screen and stands in the living-room. An angel can also make himself visible and then the situation is exactly comparable. Exactly like a television picture he is a field projection and thus invulnerable. We can fire a bullet at him without ever hitting the person himself. If we try to punch him our fist cuts through an empty space.

Aha! He is not real then, he just calls up the illusion!

He is there as really as could be. If he punches us we receive a huge blow-not because we feel his hand as material but because the hand makes the gesture through which the almighty will is activated. We are absolutely powerless against him. He comes through closed doors as a spirit but he can do everything that he wishes. Without difficulty he can make a knot in a rail-bar. He is bound to time and place just like us. When he is somewhere then he sees, hears, feels and smells just as we do, only much better. He sees as if in a transparent universe and sees through things. He can move with the speed of thought to any point of the universe. He observes the wonders of creation with his own eyes and at close quarters. He is the life-principle of the human body, the vibration-double 'filled-in' with the principle of matter. He is the real essence of a person. He is

just as real and essential as the vibration in the copper wire-web of a radio set. The material of a radio is of secondary importance, for without this electric vibration configuration no sound could come out. The only reality of a radio is this invisible vibration, the rest is a side-issue.

An angel lives exactly like this in the invisible vibration of his life-field. He lives much more really than we do. It is not that 'alas' he has to do without the material, on the contrary, he is 'freed' from the material and so he is free on a grand scale. He can go and stop and do as he wishes to the furthest corners of the universe. He really lives-in comparison we just muddle along.

The New Earth

After this exploration of the final phenomenon of man, the moment has come to continue the story of creation. 'And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven (dwelling-place of saints) and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.' (Revelations 21,1)

Why do abstract beings still need a planet?

In the first place they need a home, a frame of reference for their unique identity and also, for the time being, they must exist in the presence of time-creating matter. The principle of matter has no inertia and creates no time.

Why is the planet called the new earth?

It is a planet which is about as big as the earth and which will be taken possession of by earthly consciousness. Here not only the human life-field is awakened to new life, but also that of all plants, trees and animal species. The planet is created the known earthly paradise with a breathtakingly beautiful and unspoiled nature. Luxuriant forests, great areas of grass, an abundance of flowers, plants and bushes which bloom with eternal life. All the final animal species play the game of life with enthusiasm and abandon; a joyful paradise where the pure life manifests itself without discord, without sickness or death.

In the midst of this natural splendour the house of God stands among the people as an inviolable edifice. It is a great, shining building which seems to be made of pure gold, crystal and precious stones. like the planet itself it has a majestic splendour and an imposing beauty. A glorious 'home.'

Various things will change quickly. This humanity sparkles with creativity and a craving for action. They literally create a new earth. At first sight what happens there is hideous; they build, create and construct a copy of our present earth. They rebuild not only the fine buildings and works of art of the thousand year Reign, but also the buildings of our own present and past. They build exact copies of everything we have ever built on our planet, from cathedrals to factories, from skyscrapers to old villages, from roads and railways with cars and trains, with carts and coaches, to stations and entire airports with all possible types of airplanes etc... It is unbelievable that these beings who can move

with the speed of thought create all these things like cars, planes and rockets with thought-power. To make matters worse they also build war machines, cannons, tanks, battle-ships as well as complete slum areas and shanty-towns out of scrap material like corrugated iron and oil-drums.

This beautiful planet will once again be devastated by overzealous human hands-- at least, that is how it seems in the first shock-wave which sweeps over the observer. Fortunately, in the second instance it will be clear that something quite different is being enacted.

The final humanity builds there a complete exhibition under the heading: Man. From prehistoric times to the thousand year Reign, every interesting product of humanity will be rebuilt in the principle of material (indestructible force-field). They will be built by the original designers and builders, making use of their faultless memories. They build with thought-power and thus they do not actually have to build the objects and complexes. We have to consider them as a kind of tv-picture, filled in with normal matter, also a projection which demands only the know-how of the designer and builder.

On the eve of the cosmic integration this humanity needs not only somewhere to live, but also a frame of reference, a point of recognition for their own identity. Thoughts and memories alone are not enough for the identity-fixing. Every original individual from prehistoric times must be able to recognize himself in this eternal world exhibition. As such it is the most exact and complete exhibition imaginable.

These beings remain people in spite of their incredible expansion of consciousness. Their original identity can never be lost and therefore they need a home in which this identity is fixed. Just as we need a reference point in our own house, especially if we make long journeys, they need that too. We also need our own house if we want to receive good personal friends. The cosmic isolation of humanity will be relinquished and we will receive visitors from the universe. We will also go off on visits. The principle of cosmic integration or the linking up in the cosmic Unity in Christ is the integration of the human field of knowledge with that of other cosmic races. This integration process begins through the exchange of final individuals and their 'assimilation' on the spot in the exhibition.

Time and Space-Transforming Craft

The most fantastic journey of discovery through the stars awaits us as part of the integration process. Although it is not really relevant here, it seems interesting to tell something of the manner in which we will be able to travel through space.

This explanation concerns final people during the first phase of development of the integration process. They can move with the speed of thought through the unanimity of the group and that suggests space travel without special vehicles-of moving the body through the power of the spirit. Remarkably that is not the case, at least as far as the first phase is concerned. They use relatively simple vehicles which could not be called space ships. In fact they do not travel through space as we know it but they transpose

themselves through an abstract time-space. This abstract transposition requires a dematerialization, a parting with material which, in the form of smoke, mixes with white flakes on the planet from which they leave, sink down or fly off. For this dematerialization they have to be totally free from the surface of the planet in order to avoid undesirable damage. What they need are relatively simple anti-gravitation craft or vehicles with a sort of rocket propulsion which are best described as space capsules; shells which contain and protect the crew. This protection must be described as a force-field which forms a 'shell' around the time and space-bound bodies of the people. The capsules are shaped like bullets, eggs, pears, cigars or disks and are anywhere from a few meters to dozens of meters in size. They have one thing in common; they all have a material propulsion system in materialized form (with mass) in order to lift off from the planet's surface. This is where the 'kinetic vibrator comes in. This is an apparatus which, through a particular sort of vibration, produces an energy-loading such as a rocket has when the ram-jet has provided acceleration for a while. It 'sets off against the earth-mass so that fantastic acceleration and direction changes are possible. Since every atom within the capsule's force-field is subject to the same acceleration you do not notice a thing.

The dematerialization is not caused by a machine but purely through their matter-governing spirit and therefore it is impossible for this transposition-power to be used by the incompetent. The transposition itself is immediate, irrespective of distance and the rematerialization process follows just as swiftly (this is the 'filling in' of the vibration-double with normal matter which was described earlier). The material used is that which is available on the spot, so that it has the matter-consciousness of that particular solar system or planet.

The rematerialization takes longer than dematerialization because it takes time to 'put on' the necessary amount of matter out of an atmosphere of cloud-material. During this process the most monstrous forms can be seen and these are smoothed out only when the materialization is complete.

Sometimes a partial materialization takes place and then the form remains monstrous or dependent on the unconscious expectation-pattern of the earthly observer. He sees what he wants to see.

In fact, all of this is a phase of transition from the old material existence to an abstract spiritual existence. In the first phase we cannot manage without material. This is also apparent in the creation of the new earth where we practice a materialization of already existing earthly forms which were 'transposed,' as it were, in an abstract spiritual form to the new planet, subsequently to be 'filled in' with material on the spot. It is exactly the same principle. Complete buildings will be transported in this way. For beings 'with mind over matter' all this is possible.

The universe is literally swarming with these space capsules and it is amazing that we still observe so few of these UFO's. The number of sightings can be only a few percent of the total which are actually there.

Then there is a second category of UFO's and these originate from the earth itself. Our prehistoric ancestors, the incarnate absolute gods, also had the power of mind over matter, but were earth-bound because they had a material body from which they could not detach themselves (first generation). But what they could do, which the angels couldn't, was time-transformation. The technique of this process is also unknown to final people, probably because they could not actually use it. Although it may seem so to us, there is no foundation of dematerialization involved in this process. They used an egg-shaped capsule on three legs which took off from the earth by means of a kind of rocket engine with a radio-active flame, subsequently to disappear with a bang. Time-transformation means a sudden trans-formation of matter by which the capsule and its contents are transposed to another time in less than a microsecond, although by the look of the material earth the place remains the same. They then make use of the fact that the time-creating vibration which holds the universe in its grasp contains the absolute opposite, is timeless and exists in 'all' time. They crossed over via the time-synchronization field (see appendix) and they could do that because they existed fundamentally out of matter. To us it seems like dematerialization but it is actually a time-transfer.

Yet another ingenious facet of the creation process: Gods cannot travel through space because they cannot dematerialise themselves but they can travel through time. Angels can travel through space but not through time because they cannot 'really' materialize. Matter is not a characteristic, a condition of life. Another reason why angels cannot travel through time' is that they have to perform a great task in the future, and thus make the future. Earth Gods cannot travel through space because their task lies on earth but they are permitted to travel through time in order to study their descendants. The Gods' task was the programming of the phenomenon of man, of our individual soul, while through the divergence they lost 'the timeless, perfected knowledge-awareness. Thus they have to know what the chance-process will bring and they had the task of avoiding a calamity, without affecting our character structure. It was and remains an internal earth-concern. They will visit us frequently, especially during the final phase.

Lastly there is a third category of UFO (though there may well be more). These are not capsules but complete materialized spaceships of huge proportions and provided with a material propulsion principle, the disk or flying saucer described in this book. At present they are stationed without crews in the proximity of the earth, ready to be able to pick people up just before the catastrophe. At that time we will still have the reflection of life and will not be able to dematerialise so that we cannot be saved with capsules. Such solicitude to protect a self-opinionated race against itself!

We have nothing to fear from the craft of the angels; they are materialized manifestation-fields which function solely as look-out posts from other worlds and do nothing to disturb us.

Alas there are also misleading imitations, pseudo-spaceships which come from the earth or out of our own solar-system. These also come from the spirit-world, but from the

category which I call matter-bound spirits, they are materializations of thought-forms which can be called fantasies but which turn out to be pure deceptions.

They are the bane of many serious UFO investigators, they can take on any conceivable form and at the moment are frequently flying saucers. In the past they have manifested in other ways; as seamen who sail complete ships high in the air or lie at anchor with the anchor in a village street, as pilots who fly ghost-planes, as inventors who tested saucer-shaped airplanes etc. Now it has become a game of 'things from outer-space' and out of the saucers all kinds of humanoids beings creep; large and small, monsters and robots, even cylinder-shaped tins which walk around on two spindly legs. Sometimes it seems that these 'apparitions' answer the unconscious expectation-pattern of the chance witness and are dismissed as hallucinations. This does an injustice to the witnesses; they are subjective projections all right, but real in materialized form. Their saucers have mass, the landing legs leave prints on the ground, they can be photographed and sometimes cause damage to the spiritual or physical health of the witnesses.

For people with any knowledge of these lowest regions of the spirit world which surround us-and here I am thinking of the circles of occultists and spiritists this will come as no surprise. They are familiar with the fantastic deception which will be let loose on that level, especially on the newcomers who tread the terrain of spiritist contact for the first time. It is the world of knocking spirits, poltergeists, rains of stones (spirits), goblins and elves, utterly demonic, self-less entities and archaic atavism It is a world of lies, deceit and misleading. Literally not one word of what they say is true. On a 'higher' level there are pure satanic manifestations which must be respected as dangerous. As long as they play the UFO game this deception goes all right, but problems begin when they make contact with people either the third kind-sometimes these may also be in the area of the paranormal. What they say then seems deceptively like serious messages in the philosophical or scientific field, but with expert examination it always turns out to be sheer nonsense. Sometimes these witnesses are held on the line for years without any useful information being given or anything sensible coming out-with all the damage it does to them.

This deception is sometimes followed by the manifestation of an anti-power. The UFO witness concerned is then called up or visited by 'men in black' who, by means of persuasion, intimidation or deceit, attempt to silence him- normal' voices or men who speak to the person concerned in his native tongue.

These imitations can even be involved in an accident here on Earth, they can dematerialise only at a certain altitude, and hitting the Earth surface hard enough to damage the material propulsion system means that no return is ever possible. Therefore accidents can happen through which not only remnants of their ships but also the bodies of "dead" humanoids remain here on Earth.

It would be extremely interesting if we could obtain examples of such bodies or materials for examination because then it will be proved that they are imitations. The

bodies are just imitations of living beings which never have lived in reality, they are missing the vital organs for metabolism, blood circulation, breathing, etc. The remnants of materials will prove to be imitations of earthly metals. It sounds unbelievable that such "spiritual degenerations" are still able to materialize but alas, they are "really" there.

The reason for this detailed but otherwise parenthetic explanation is the expectation that this deception will increase considerably in the coming years, especially if the information in this book, although of UFO origin, is recognized as the truth. It is then almost certain that those with this information who break open the isolation of the earth will go and 'play' with the aim of creating chaos. My teachers are firm in their opinion that once this information is published no second contact with earth will take place-this is a 'one-off.' In addition, a 'real' contact is quickly and easily recognized by the efficiency with which the information is given in a very short time, and in that it always refers to God and his plans for the earth. All the rest is deception. If in spite of this, someone allows himself to be enticed into a UFO contact, let him ask the simple question: What do you say of the Christ? From the answer their identity will be clear: materialized fantasies, degenerations of previous gods.

The Cosmic Integration

So, at some point we will goon a journey through the stars and it will be a great journey of discovery. It is a joyful study and experience through the direct observation of the wonders of God's creation.

The receiving of visitors out of the universe is as effusive as if good friends are meeting again after centuries of separation. The reason for this is simple; the origin of our 'self our trans-formation-original, has also lived on many other planets. Not on all planets, for the talent-configuration is dependent on the character of the planet and therefore is an assortment. Nevertheless, many final people will recognize their alter-ego and realize that they have lived there themselves. Our other self has a totally different character there, another past, another knowledge-consciousness and other attained talents and powers. Before we can converge with it to complete the mixture of talents, the transformation, all memories will be recalled.

These are intensely joyful meetings in which a new and awe inspiring world opens up to us. On other planets the past is just as present as it is on the new earth, so that we can see the exciting adventure 'films' of the transformation of divine consciousness of other worlds in real life. Even better, we will understand the wonderful harmony of the creation and our existence becomes yet more interesting.

Step by step a steadily greater and extensive consciousness forms through the integration of two planetary knowledge-fields and the subsequent convergence of final people. Words cannot describe more than a fraction of this world of experience. What a life, what an existence!

Because of the wondrous creative aspects and the almost inexhaustible field of work this

cosmic journey of discovery is an incomparable challenge for which every person must achieve the peak of his abilities. The universe is so incredibly large, as is the number of intelligent races which will bring the convergence and a breadth of consciousness which surpasses all human understanding. The Father has given us not only the possibility for equality but even for a much bigger consciousness than His. He has also given us a freedom of action which is greater than his own. He has created our unimaginable experience of happiness through his suffering. Yet He does not ask for Love. He only gives.

At first this cosmic integration process, this shaping of consciousness, is only the means and not the end. The first purpose of the Son and His People is the almighty expression ofl6ve for the Father. At particular times the people collect together round the house of God on the new earth. They come to be one in the Self-awareness of the Son of Man in order to see and experience the Father in the unity of their spiritual power. No information was given about this spectacle. Every question on this subject was answered with the symbol for the unspeakable. It is some-thing so extraordinary that every attempt at description necessarily constitutes a devaluation.

Therefore this description must limit itself to one of their almighty possibilities of expression, in the hope that this will still be comprehensible. it is a precarious subject, for it concerns their singing. There are many people who do not like singing, but in the completion that will be quite different. In their unanimous manifestation the angels have not only all knowledge, but also all skills of all people. They can, for instance, sing as the best singers the earth has ever produced. They also gain great pleasure from this skill and that stimulates their creativity enormously and in every conceivable way.

This is not just singing, but an almighty expression of their feelings with the force of a volcanic explosion. Imagine; a choir of hundreds of millions who have such a unity of thinking that without a conductor they can sing such a precise staccato that it seems like one voice, with a perfect purity and an awe-inspiring volume and timbre. The power of this singing is so great that everything vibrates in harmony. Not just the plants and animals but the very ground of the planet vibrates-or, to put it better, join in with their own singing which, with the strength of a hurricane, brings everything into movement. It is a spiritual form of singing and therefore not sound as we know it; more a vibrating primeval force, but to their ears it is pure music of earthly origin.

They sing variations and improvisations. At certain moments more choirs weave several voices through each other, sometimes joining in, sometimes quiet again, a moment of silence, then a swelling to a powerful volume that jubilantly echoes away. They are vocal works of art with an expressiveness which shakes matter to its foundations, yet with a tenderness which reminds us of whispering. They sing often and with pleasure in the universal language of the angels. They are feelings expressed in waves of musicality and in which no one is missed out. They are expressions which tremble through their ecstatic spiritual rapture, utterances of love and thankfulness to Him, who has given us all He had to give and whom we all have to thank.

Then in a moment of silence they ’hear’ from the unfathomable depth of the universe, carried across a distance of many light years, another song from our cosmic brothers and a little 3 later they join in with their harmonic variations and additions. Thus a fantastic music whirls through infinite space, further and further. In their singing their all-might and the cosmic extent of their consciousness manifest themselves at their clearest, but what they experience is indescribable. To think that as yet no eye has seen and no ear has heard what the Father has prepared for those who love Him.… That is what awaits us after the completion of the universe.

CHAPTER 10

Other Cosmic Races

The Main Division

In the course of the story of creation the difference between the earthly cycle and the normal cycle has been pointed out more than once, so a more concrete description of the other cycles cannot be omitted.

As has been said, every life-supporting planet is a chance creation on which life can develop to fit in with the unique conditions or characteristics of the planet. In the multitude of varying conditions gravity plays a large part because it is the love-power of matter, whereas in the multiplicity of chemical substances the element iron stimulates the aggressive character exponent. I have pushed this sort of assertion with respect to the characteristics of planetary substances and conditions aside because they are uncontrollable, so I shall limit myself to their most primary and comprehensible effects.

To begin with, all life in the universe depends on the presence of water in liquid form on the greatest part of the planet at an average temperature between 180 and 65degrees C (at high gas pressures). Gravity varies between 0.5 and 3G and the pressure between 0.8 and 9 bars. Within these very narrow borders life exists, but the number of solar systems which support planets is so incredibly large that the number of life-supporting planets runs to billions. Even between these narrow borders the number of variation possibilities is pretty well unlimited. There are small planets with low gravity, but also those with high gravity. There are large planets with both a low and high gravity. The thickness of the atmosphere appears to be totally unrelated to any laws. A thick atmosphere with a high pressure can be found just as well on a large as on a small planet-and the same goes for a thin atmosphere. Yet all intelligent races without exception are humanoid, man-like with a heady, body, arms and legs in the usual places. In height they vary from 90 cm to 2.70, with the head about the same size as ours. In general the inhabitants of planets with higher gravity are small, around one meter, and with low gravity they are bigger-around two meters. But there are exceptions to every rule. Thus, Iarga is a large planet with just about maximum gravity where you might expect humanoids of about 90cm, but they are almost 1.50 m. The reason is that this race has developed out of the water and were forced as a handicap to live on land where originally they were not at all at home. Each planet has something extraordinary and no two are the same. The goal of the universe is actually to have the greatest possible variation.

One of the consequences of the chance creation is that on every planet which offers the possibility, life MUST come into existence unless the final form of that life will not be able to reach completion. In the latter case life is FORBIDDEN from coming into existence. What would be the point of chance creation if God had carried out a planetary selection, for then He would have determined the character of His Son. Therefore we must be prepared in advance to encounter life in the most bizarre situations, in

comparison with which even our ravaged earth could be called a lovely dwelling-place.

From this it follows that there are planets with much misery, and in that we are certainly no exception. To continue, there are other planets where the races live under divine guidance in shining harmony with God and nature and where no war or other large scale violence takes place. Can that be true?

We can be convinced of one thing; the story of creation is irreproachable. Honesty and justice are there to the nth degree.

The question as to whether the people on a harmonious planet are really so much happier seems to be irrelevant because there is a natural compensation mechanism. A person IS what he has done and experienced. In the Resurrection he IS the knowledge and experience of the past life. He then lives out of his old world of experience and goes through the happiness of the completion FROM his old situation. A blind person will experience an amazing 'charge' of happiness through the fact that he can see; a heavily handicapped person through the fact that he enjoys a fantastic freedom of movement, and a slave because he is free and equal with everyone else. It is true that the reward is the same for everyone, but each experiences it in his own way.

Then it begins to seem that a person who has known much happiness and prosperity has, in fact, had bad luck, for this extra experience of happiness is eternal.

No, there is simply a complete compensation for all suffering and misery, accurately apportioned, following a natural mechanism and no more than that. In the course of time tiiis extra experience of happiness through the process of unification will disappear into an even greater consciousness, or at least, will longer be recognizable. The conclusion is that ultimately it seems that no one has had either good or bad luck.

This compensation mechanism makes it possible, on every planet with the potential for it, to let life exist, in spite of the misery which can come from it. Therefore the divine guidance of particular intelligent races is exclusively geared to the driving out of the malicious exponent of dualism. The natural result is the considerable reduction of suffering, but it is not the objective. God does not hinder suffering and sometimes He even inflicts it. In the Bible it says: He that I love, him do I punish and chastise. Suffering and happiness are still , for the moment, absolute opposites, the one does not exist without the other - but also the one not more than the other.

Here again it follows that on planets where the suffering is considerably less the experience of happiness is also, on average, proportionally less. Life knows fewer low points but also fewer peaks. There the danger of monotony and lethargy arise -dynamism can be absent through the lack of challenge. If the challenge from planetary conditions is missing, then the Spirit of God has, through a real Intervention, built in the trigger for a particular - handicap in advance -consider the trigger in the earth's mechanism which will cause a shift of the poles. Although the latter is not a challenge but serves another purpose, the principle of external Intervention in advance is the same.

Each race will be either directly or indirectly guided without affecting the character

structure. A challenge does not actually change a character but it forces it into manifestation.

After this general explanation of a number of conditions, we can now go on to a general discussion of several typical development processes.

There are three main types:

1. The direct, uninterrupted divine guidance of the dwarf races which live on the great incubation planets (closed cycle, no Fall).
2. The interrupted divine guidance of the middle races, the most usual cycle and to which Iarga also belongs (closed cycle, deferred Fall).
3. The 'own boss' cycle without direct divine guidance of the long legged races on cold planets such as Earth (open cycle direct Fall).

The Dwarf Races

Planetary conditions: large planets with a thick atmosphere, gravity between 2 and 3G, atmospheric pressure over 5 bars, temperature over 40 degrees C. They are regarded as gigantic incubators with a constant temperature and high humidity, little wind, calm seas and oceans, dim light through the thick cloud cover, hilly, heavily eroded, very monotonous. Many volcanoes bring things to life from time to time.

Everything there grows and blossoms abundantly; a rich flora and fauna, a surfeit of food, a dusky paradise which guarantees a small group of people a comfortable life.

The Dwarves: from 90cm tall, they look very much like us but because of their large heads they look just like children, a graceful, lightly-built body, but wiry and strong, relatively large hands and feet.

They have big round eyes, bald heads, thin lips and are cold-blooded. Their bodies are the same temperature as the surroundings, they look pale and peaky, few obvious sexual characteristics, scanty sexuality and slow propagation. They are general naked-living nature folk who put on clothes only in extraordinary circumstances and then prefer white, high-necked garments which do not suit their pale complexions. They live in the steaming white woods which borrow their name from the very light coloured tree trunks and branches, and white flecks and stripes on the otherwise green leaves.

In this rain forest there often hangs a thin layer of mist a little above the ground, which makes it even darker. They do not seem to have much trouble with the gravity which is three times higher than ours, but then they weigh only a third as much as we do . We would not get far there on foot. The trees don't seem to have any trouble with the gravity either for their trunks and branches are hardly any thicker than those on earth. The people look like children and they also behave like children, playful and carefree. They do not make themselves busy and the level of organization of their society is almost nil. For these children with their sharp, intelligent, faces, life is simply a big game which you absolutely mustn't take seriously.

The women are a little more strongly built than the men and clearly have the whip hand. It is a matriarchal society but that is not so much because the woman is dominant but because otherwise they would have nothing to eat. The men sit at home and, if they feel like it, prepare the food and take care of the children, whereas the women go hunting and collect the food. When they come back the men are set to work -- otherwise they do not do a thing. This, in a few words, is a little of the atmosphere in which that happens. From this historic background the women later took the lead in the governing and production apparatus and also became the religious leaders of this race.

In all races with a closed cycle, where during the transformation phase a highly unselfish mentality is created, the women have the lead. Man seems unable to do that.

Their Development

Their development is incredibly slow; if their final total is almost reached after 10,000 years, then everything is still the same. A virgin planet which, from the air appears to be uninhabited, with a population of a few hundred million who are comfortably spread through the richly-forested paradise and who have developed no science or technology. A situation which seems worthless to an intelligent race. The reason lies in the fact that here the mental development will be completed first, in contrast to the earth where that happens last.

Their individuality is poorly developed, they exist by the grace of their group or tribal bond. Everything happens within a group of a few hundred people and they have an unbelievably high level of obedience - not only to the laws of the tribe but also to divine laws. Already since the beginning they had such a highly unselfish level of mentality that they cross the threshold before the final contemplation. It seems as if they have no will of their own and are happy whenever something or someone tells them what they must do. As I have said, they are exactly like small children.

Through their contemplative faculties they know and talk with God. Every person has (like we) a fractional part of the consciousness of God (an angel) and thus each one has a direct 'telephone line' to Him. It is a population of magicians with amazing spiritual powers which from time to time demonstrate the power of mind over matter. They are capable of telekinesis, teleportation, clairvoyance, clairaudience and the laying on of hands, in which they heal the sick through the will of the group.

They are very exactly conscious of the cause of their dualism for they speak through their demon just as easily with Satan and 'they know which iron-hard formation is necessary to suppress the demon in oneself. Disobedience will be heavily punished and the identification with Satan, which they clearly recognize, leads to condemnation to hard labour, a kind of slaver which is strongly enforce. They force these people to the development of skills and to work as the only way to save them. As soon as they really recognize one called by Satan, one of the 144,000 with a perverse love of evil, this person is required to be killed.

This makes sense because on this planet reincarnation selection exists. Satan is not

blocked there and he goes round looking to see who he can devour. This happens literally in death. A failing man who has irrevocably identified himself with Satan has no immortal self-awareness. He has not fulfilled the trans-formation and if in death he loses' his transformation-original, then he also loses his self-awareness. Their 'empty shell' is then taken oven by Satan and excluded from further incarnation.

Thus, on the one side through saving and on the other side through exclusion they have a remarkably high mental level through which the Son could be called without problem, should it ever be necessary.

There is what seems to us a strange situation of an intelligent race which in number is more or less complete and which can achieve the completion without problems, but which is still in such a primitive state. They know God and the evil spirit, they know how to keep the later under control but know nothing of their origin or the purpose of their existence. They wait for the Son, and why does He not yet come?

He doesn't come yet because only the woman has fulfilled her task of creation The man has remained lacking; it was not yet his turn. To bring him to action on such a planet he must first be forcibly shaken awake and challenged. For this there is an inbuilt trigger on the planet which will be set off by the race itself. This can work out in many ways, but the principle (with a few exceptions) is universal.

Gravity is the self-love of the matter-consciousness. Altruism gives out, egoism pulls to itself. If the race is now complete and all individuals after many reincarnations are living, then this race should be almost almighty in its unity. They ARE the planetary matter-consciousness, the final form of it, and through their altruism they cause an opposing effect to gravity. They also disturb the fragile balance of power in the planet itself, or in its orbit around their sun, which results in various destructive natural disasters. The destruction concerns, as a rule, the living environment and not the race itself. The white woods on which they have depended for their food, disappear, mainly as a result of dramatic climatic alterations. It could be, for instance, a graze from another planet which causes a large part of their atmosphere to disappear, the sea-level to drop or chemical substances to affect plant growth. It could be drought or a continual wind which destroys the woods, etc. In short, their protection falls away and they have to fight for their existence.

The first thing they will be confronted with is a shortage of food and through this, as already said, the most selfish instincts of man come to the surface. It is something that they have never been affected by before, so the effects are very powerful. Their tribal bond is strong enough to over-come internal conflict over food, but conflict does exist between the tribes. They have to organize agriculture and stock-raising and at the same time defend their harvest against the other tribes, who in their social naivety think they have a right to everything which grows and blossoms.

The real dwarf races go through this test splendidly. Through their extraordinary spiritual powers they see the new challenge through, and together with their high level

of unselfishness, in a short time they find the way to a just division and an optimal approach to their new problems.

The man awakens, he no longer plays but uses his inventiveness and creative fantasy. Leadership born of necessity, plus a conscious use of his contemplative powers change him into a hard worker who takes care of his fellow man.

This wonder generally comes about in a short time. They create a highly organized society on the basis of three principles: freedom, justice and efficiency and they show the explosion of creativity which is reserved to all unselfish groups. They create highly scientific and technological levels and already in a few years (less than a hundred) they can fly with anti-gravity machines to fulfil important transportation tasks. They have suddenly found urgency. They population growth also increases sharply, for they know now that they are on the eve of the coming of their 'King'.

The King of Love

Their 'Son of Man' will be, exactly as with us, born of a virgin from the conception of the spirit, but for these beings with their clairvoyant spirit this does not go unnoticed. This 'Son of Man' will have a great welcome prepared for him and his upbringing and development will be led in the most expert way possible, by an elite group with the power of mind over matter. He will be the King of Love who rules in the Kingdom of peace and justice over the whole planet. In all races with a closed cycle - thus also on Iarga, this happens in the same way. It is always a race with a high level of obedience and unselfishness, who are like children and who have already for a long time had the Kingdom in their hearts.

There is another big difference between the earth and these planets - there is no Resurrection there. When the King comes many hundreds of millions of people are living in a natural way and each of them has, by means of the wheel of rebirth, fulfilled perhaps hundreds of lives. Thus everyone is there because the convergence of individuality came about naturally, so there are already final individuals present.

Another point of difference is the kingdom of death -- for it is empty.

Here there are no billions of dead sitting in the 'grandstand' awaiting the Resurrection. In other words, the entire race are the chosen ones of the Kingdom -- with the exception, of course of the disciples of Satan. The Kingdom of death has always been a waiting room for the next life and not for the Resurrection, as with us. It was the same paradise in which the assimilation of former lives took place. There too there came into existence the same complementary consciousness component, the will to remedy or undergo what one had done to others -'karma', but no more than that. Their burden of guilt hinders the achievement of 'Nirvana', the expansion of consciousness which developed through the inversion in the collective spirit. This Spirit was not so developed either, so that everything fitted together harmoniously.

They have a closed cycle without outside Intervention.

There the *Christus Unitas Universitatis* which absolves the total guilt for them did not come ever.

In other words, the Objective of this Kingdom is other than ours. The peace and justice already existed to the full and did not need to be created anew. This King led his people in the Realm of love AND knowledge, on the way to the inversion in the collective knowledge consciousness, the Spirit.

The first result of this inversion is that each individual becomes conscious of all previous lives and has the self-awareness of them. This collective Spirit is really a dualistic spirit and through this consciousness the spirit of Satan will also rise, but on this planet this is not a problem.

After this short explanation of a number of margins the explanation of this Kingdom can now follow. The Son here will become human under ideal conditions. The communication and possibilities for travel are optimal. After his realization of his identity and consciousness, the recognition and acknowledgement of his kingship follows swiftly as a shockwave which washes over the whole race. Their clairvoyant powers often make this recognition before he actually manifests. When He is the focus of their love-power He has the natural all-might of this (numerically) perfected humanity and a fantastic happening can occur. During a manifestation where the whole race is present, the equivalent of our Resurrection takes place in the blink of an eye. Suddenly all the people are transmuted to a materially 'filled in' life-field or vibration-double, with mind over matter. Children and the elderly then also live in the resurrected body, the 'glorified body' which no longer knows decline, sickness or death. Everyone will be conscious of his former lives and so too begins the inversion in the collective Spirit. Apart from that, a few who at that moment were dead, will rise in the same way as with us, but in principle this is the Resurrection of a living humanity and thus not a rising but a mutation.

At the same time, through the same natural all-might of the group, the spirit of Satan and his gang will be blocked until the appointed time. Here the situation is comparable with our own after the first Resurrection but with two fundamental differences: all real people are present and as final individuals -individuality convergences of hundreds of people, men and women, are therefore genderless. From this the necessity for the previously mentioned low sexual urge is again apparent because (if there was any) it will have to have been suppressed in former lives. Sex plays no part here in the great test. Everything fits together in harmony.

Here too, the incarnation of the Son takes place in the first instance in *one* person, after which he calls his first chosen ones and only at a later moment will His full Incarnation (the Marriage) take place. the principles are the same but there will be great differences in the way they are worked out. Here the King of Love rules over a race of saints in comparison with ourselves. Their mentality and capacity for love are already extensively

developed, sometimes to such an extent that they are ready for the great temptation by Satan. The Kingdom there lasts a much shorter time than the thousand years on earth. Here the emphasis lies on the development of their knowledge and science and that again results in the unequalled explosion of creativity mentioned earlier. The speed with which this happens is much greater than with us because they do not need to repeat things. This last has bearing on their planet and all that stands on it. On Iarga for instance, they continue to use their living cylinders with the existing communication and transport systems as usual - it is all still there!

On these planets there is no total destruction of all human works, no cataclysmic bulldozer mows them down, so all happenings follow each other much more fluently and naturally. At the same time this removes the veil over why the Iargans strived after such a fantastic durability - living cylinders, roads and rail systems with lifetimes of up to a thousand years. Before the final period of their super culture, they already prepared the Kingdom.

Their Completion

The son reigns here for only a short time, not longer which is allotted to Satan and that, according to our time-scale, means only a few years. Longer would be unnecessary; unselfish beings recognize the Son immediately because in fact they already have His identity. Here too he 'rises' with body and soul to heaven because he is now immortal, but he takes leave of his people for only a short time. Here too He must first leave before the Spirit of Truth can come and He names twelve apostles of which one will be his replacement. They are twelve masters in knowledge and science who receive the Spirit and in one of whom He will incarnate individually.

Then the integration of the Spirit of Truth in the collective Spirit of the race becomes a fact, exactly as will happen during the Kingdom on earth. In this period they too are alone, no guiding God and no Son, they have to do it completely by themselves. They also decide the moment at which Satan and his gang will be let loose to let the great test begin. The second generation of archangels has the whip hand, they will create the new God.

Here the integration process of the Spirit will be fulfilled by living people, whereas on earth the development process will, for the most part, be in death during the Kingdom. From then on the differences become fewer: the purification, the atonement of Satan and the completion, including the destruction of their solar system, happen in exactly the same way.

In general terms it comes down to the fact that with all races with a closed cycle where no outside Intervention has taken place, the development in the Kingdom is effected as outlined above. This also applies to the closed cycle of Iarga of which this sketch is an essential part of their identification procedure which I could not discuss within the framework of the first part of this book. The same goes as follows.

The Second Category: The Middle-Cycle

As I have said this is the most common cycle, to which the planet Iarga also belongs. The most fundamental difference with the dwarf races is that their obedience and love-polarization lie on a lower and more average level. Through the challenge of the planetary conditions or the inbuilt 'trigger', after an initial period of obedience such a race lapses into sin, the knowledge of good and evil.

I cannot give a categorical division into planetary conditions, because it could be literally everything. In general they are larger planets than earth, but smaller than those of the dwarf races. The chemical composition plays a big part in this. The size of these 'people' is between 1.20 and 1.60 m. with the marginal note that the difference in height is mainly in the length of the legs. Those who come from the land look very much like us but those who, as on Iarga, originate from the water have no resemblance to us a all - particularly in the face. The number of variations is very great so that my teachers did not venture to give a general description. They let an account of Iarga suffice as there is no typical middle-cycle planet.

Iarga is a silicon-manganate planet, in the same way as they call earth an iron planet, and is almost completely covered with water with a low salt content. In principle it is a big incubation planet with even temperatures and little wind. Yet it is not an abundant planet because the soil of their few islands is very absorbent so that a lot of rain is necessary in order to support plant growth. Short periods of drought are devastating and change the landscape into an arid desert. Life, therefore, is mainly concentrated in the coastal areas and in particular in a small stretch along the water. Only fish and amphibians can sustain the fight for existence because at times only the water offers the chance for survival. One exception was the birds which initially were there in great numbers - quite remarkable for a planet with a gravity of 3G. I forgot to ask how that was possible, but they were swift flyers with small wings, which could hang for hours in the air like gliders. Later they died out.

The Iargans developed from a life-form which probably never existed on earth, a sort of giant otter which could walk on four legs and which, when swimming, held their two back legs pressed against each other, the whole body in a waving movement like a dolphin. The wide webbed 'feet' functioned as a tail and the front legs were folded against the body so that the webbed 'hands' worked as front fins. They were very fast swimmers which could glide, but could also walk on land. From this line of evolution the Iargan race eventually developed. They still swim in exactly the same way but they walk upright and have developed much stronger arms. In their faces one can still recognize something of the otter-type.

The first tribes lived completely amphibiously, partly from catching fish and partly from the naturally growing fruits and plants which as far as climatic conditions allowed, grew along the coast. All transport was on or through the water, and they quickly developed a form of ship. Because of the calm seas, the first boats were a kind of pontoon, wide shallow craft which were propelled with the help of poles or paddles. Later they added a mast with proa-like sails which could catch the light trade winds.

Let me not deny you an amusing detail. Already before the Fall, when the planet was still in a virgin state and there was still no technique of the importance of signals, motor boats went about on the almost still seas. Wooden ships, reminiscent of submarines with a sharp bow, small flat deck but with a fat belly, mostly under water. On top were masts with sails and a little behind these was a real funnel out of which came smoke! The principle of the engine was so primitive and simple that it is amazing that we have never discovered something like it. It was typically Iargan, without moving parts and what is more, reasonably efficient. There was a metal pot-belly stove in which a fire was laid. the top consisted of a flat box into which water was poured from two pipes, one came from the bottom of the ship and the other ran to the back and was aimed backwards. The under-part of this flat box, which was heated by the fire, was made from two layers of different metals which were melted together, as I understand it a sort of bimetal.

Otherwise in the supply pipes there was a recoil valve, that was all. The bottom plate worked as a membrane and constantly thudded up and down so that it functioned as a pump and forced the water backwards. Through this jet the ship moved forward, slowly but surely, making a sound like a slowly-turning single cylinder diesel - plop, plop, plop.

A later development on larger ships had a whole row of stoves through which the pulsations strengthened each other and greater power was achieved. They made a lot of noise, chiefly in low frequencies which the Iargans cannot hear - but we can!

Let us now get back to the Iargan evolution. It now becomes clear that the handicap of this race was not just that they had little land but that apart from the stretch by the coast, little of it could be used. However slow the population growth was, there came the inescapable moment when there was too little space and food for the population and they were forced to become a highly organized society. Initially the conditions of a dwarf race --everything in abundance-- and later scarcity.

The Deferred Fall

In the beginning their mental development progressed according to the schedule of the dwarf races, the domination of the woman, strong group-bonding, a low level of individuality, a relatively high level of obedience and love-polarization, slow development in all aspects, including their mentality, and a more or less stationary situation without shocking occurrences. A peace-loving people without great conflicts, honest, friendly and easy-going.

Apart from these points of agreement there are also fundamental differences with the privileged dwarf races. Their level of unselfishness lies below the threshold of the final contemplation, they do not speak with God and do not know his demonic component either. On these planets a Self-manifesting God rules, who sends his ambassadors to dictate the law to his people, so that in the beginning period the disobedient were harshly punished, especially when it concerned women. This is comparable with the manifestations of Jahveh and the appearance of Moses.

It is not a population of magicians and thus the domination of the woman is less. From

the example of the motor boat it appears that the man is certainly busy with technological development, albeit slow. In the area of mental development they were already far advanced and thus they had weapons, although initially they were intended exclusively for hunting.

The end of their paradise came swiftly and abruptly when they had achieved the critical population density of their living and food area. A long period of drought created a scarcity of food and thus these nature folk who lived without strife or competition were forced into organized work in order to survive. They had to organize agriculture and build pumping stations for irrigation.

Exactly as with the dwarf races here also the man was awakened and changed into a hard worker and organizer for the survival of the tribe. Here too the harvest had to be protected against other tribes, rare elements such as iron and copper had to be acquired at any cost, gold became a means of payment and so sorties of conquest fratricide, exploitation and even slavery entered the picture. At a certain moment they were well on the way to creating an earth-type situation on Iarga.

At this low point of their history God stepped in and a huge natural disaster took place, which they call the fire of sin; a mysterious fire in the atmosphere which created enormous increases in temperature and wind speed and as a result of which a large part of the life of the planet was destroyed. The survivors were divided over twelve islands and received a new divine Law which regulated their society much more strictly than before. It was the Law which prescribed freedom, justice and efficiency as the highest standard of their behaviour; concepts which were described in detail during the identification. In this the woman received the executive power in the control of the observation of the Law.

The punishment which they received consisted of a continual strong wind in which no natural woods could exist any longer, so that they were forced into organized agriculture and stock breeding with artificial irrigation. The fire had actually destroyed part of their atmosphere so that the pressure decreased and it became lighter. Because of this there were greater variations in temperature and in the wind along with a lower average rain fall. The immense forests between their living cylinders exist now exclusively from specially cultivated tree-species which can survive the strong wind pressure.

The constant wind is simultaneously a constant warning that divine Law cannot be disregarded without punishment. The shock which the survivors have to process seems strong enough to shield their successors form new disobedience; certainly the natural tendency of this race towards obedience is attributable to them.

Thus they set about bringing their low level of polarization in their all through a lengthy process of mentality improvement to the level at which the final contemplation was possible. so they again found the link to the closed cycle in which the completion could come about in natural way.

Finally; The Race Which Is Its Own Boss

The third category of cosmic races live on the planets with great handicaps and in general have the dominant feature of self-will. They form only a small percentage and live as a rule on the cold planets with a low natural food-yield.

See table on p.312

Although amphibian races occur here too, they are mainly people like ourselves with a height of .60 to 2.70 m. There are races among them who are so much like us that we would not recognize them as 'aliens' if we were to come across them in the street. They are also in various colours - white, brown and black, but still just a bit different from us if you know what to look for .There are also bluish and greenish variations and many are bald and have more pear-shaped heads. There was a picture there of what I called the deaths-head brigade; exactly like a human skull which was covered with a pale greenish skin and from which two big eyes stared at me with almost black irises and pupils. Something for a chamber of horrors.

But in general the similarity was so striking that I began to ask how it can be in this chance creation that at a distance of thousands of light-years practically the same beings seem to exist. The answer was very simple. The objective of the unregulated chance creation is to create the greatest possible variety of characters, not of physical forms. In the great convergence the physical form is unimportant because it is a convergence of consciousness in which the body is no longer bound to a fixed shape. Each race possesses a unique character structure and in this the chemical structure of the body plays a part. The metabolic processes are as a rule drastically different and that shows, for instance, in the colour of the blood which seems to come in all colours of the rainbow: red, brown, green, yellow, white, blue and black with many intermediate colours. The concept 'humanoid' seems to include an unlimited number of variations. The aim is just character variation; our spiritual body in the completion will look somewhat different from the present one.

The development process of a race with an open cycle does not need to be described because the earth is a typical example. Typical features are: low gravity, a thin atmosphere, strong light, long legs, sprinters in every aspect of the word, a fast cycle, quick population growth, fast development of science and technology, quick introduction of weapons of total destruction, etc. This last is especially remarkable - in the arms race we are far from unique. This arises from the cosmic law that a highly developed technological civilization destroys all discrimination on pain of self-destruction.

Also typical are the premature Incarnation of the Son and the number of external Interventions that arise as a result. Gradually the question comes up: in what way are we unique? But that is exactly the question which they would not answer. The cosmic journey of discovery is specifically set up for us to discover that. One thing is sure, we will find races who have struck it worse then we have, at least if we manage to prevent the premature destruction of mankind by nuclear or bacteriological arm.....

The aim of this description of other intelligent races is first to acquire a better insight into the great Creation plan, and second in order to understand that we have the right of existence as a divine Creation in the midst of an inconceivable number of other races in which we will appear to be neither superior nor inferior.

CHAPTER 11

The Consequences

No Spirit without Engagement

The close of the story of creation must be a description of the concrete purposes and the consequences of this extraterrestrial intervention. Up to this point it is a story and in spite of the amount of information which is given one can describe it as a free piece which can be taken or left at will. Human freedom is inviolable and thus this freedom also remains intact. It can all be true but the chance that it is founded on fantasy or deception is too great and the chance that it is true would be too small to be believable, so for the moment we take it simply as notification.

At least, that is how I, as an arbitrary reader, would have reacted to a book such as this. Thus it is not without scruples that I want to ask my readers to put aside their scepticism and to think about the consequences of this book if the story of creation turns out to be true. To those who are not prepared to face these possibilities I can only give the advice to pass over this chapter to spare them exasperation. The problem is actually that the publication of this knowledge is not completely free but has consequences which I am not permitted to keep secret because they concern everyone.

Imagine that it is true, that this knowledge breaks open the isolation of the earth, that no person could think of or reconstruct of his own accord because this knowledge was blocked in human thought and that the publication of it unblocks Spirit or a field of knowledge with incalculable consequences for every person. Give me then the benefit of the doubt, for what I have to tell is, to the cynic, the height of arrogance, but alas, it is the truth.

The Unchained Spirit

As has been said, the Word forbids the confrontation of a mainly ignorant humanity with the anti-god or antichrist. Therefore all intelligent races with an open cycle will be startled at some point by the intervention of an allied race which bursts in uninvited with the fundamental knowledge of the creation plan and thus breaks open their isolation for the first time. The question now is, what happens if our isolation is abolished -apart from the fact that our curiosity would be satisfied.

The explanation takes us back to the moment when Jesus Christ blocked Satan twenty centuries ago until the final phase. The principle of this blocking is of importance now in order to explain how it can be lifted again. The Son and Satan are the two poles of the new love-power of direct absolute origin and as such, just like the Father and Lucifer, have no self-awareness (no ego-entity). To manifest themselves independently or to become incarnate they must have the Spirit, for he is, as it were, their self-awareness or ego-entity and that is best described as knowledge, experience, awareness of objective and powers of recognition (with the note that the recognition of the goal is fundamental

knowledge with a pole-direction or love-polarization -- or, to put it another way, knowledge with a particular 'colour' which leads to distinct affections and aversions, a sort of rational form of love). Therefore the Spirit can be converted to KNOWLEDGE with a 'colour'.

The Son and Satan cannot become incarnate without their Spirit, no more than they can take possession of another person if they do not have their Spirit. The Spirit is still original in every divine or anti-divine Consciousness. This is to make it clear that the blocking of Satan cannot be anything other than the blocking of his Spirit and since only absolute opposites can block each other, this must have happened through the Spirit of the Son (Christ). The strange thing about it is that if two absolute opposites have a hold on each other, they are both blocked so that also the Spirit of Truth was excluded from manifestation. How does that tally with the sending of the Helper, the Spirit of Truth, by Jesus Christ, Who will stay with us for ever? (see descent of the Holy Ghost).

The answer shows again what an enormous Intervention was needed in order to save mankind. It was not actually the Spirit of the earthly Christ, not the Spirit of the Son of Man, but the Spirit of the cosmic Christ, the Spirit-Q (of intelligent races who have already reached the completion) which blocked the spirit of Satan; it was an outside Intervention. The Spirit of the Son of Man was not yet almighty and could not block Satan and furthermore His Hands were tied by the external Intervention but He 'colour' was free and every person who believed could have Him. But how handicapped was he? In John (16, 13) Jesus says: he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak. he shall receive of mine and shall show it unto you. John (14, 26) He shall teach you all things and bring all things to your remembrance, what so ever I have said unto you.

He could only tell what he had heard from Jesus and that, in comparison with what Jesus really could have told, was very little. Thus the complicated situation came about in which an earthly consciousness was joined with an 'alien' Spirit (his knowledge) which held Satan blocked, while the earth-quality of the Spirit (the earthly knowledge) remained free but was handicapped.

What does the blocking of the Spirit mean now, in daily life? It is the blockade of the knowledge - and goal-awareness (power of recognition) of the Son and Satan - plus the knowledge of the great plan of creation - without which they are both incomprehensible and not really recognizable. This complexity of knowledge was blocked in the earthly-consci6usness. In practice this means that however long humanity had endured, no person could ever have envisioned or reconstructed the true story of creation -- or, to put it another way, could have planted the real power of recognition for the Son AND Satan.

For the modern scientist this sounds unacceptable. The human spirit has unlimited possibilities, with life and health we will at some point unravel all the secrets of the universe; nothing is blocked... The spiritual reality is really quite different; there is much which is blocked. We 're'-discover only that which the absolute gods in prehistoric times

prepared for us in the earth-consciousness, and all the rest was blocked (right up until now).

For instance, we could never have discovered the basic structure of the atomic field or of gravity, but now the Spirit-Q is set free and joined to the earth-consciousness-these things are possible. Hence the prediction in the first chapter of part two of this book that we will build anti-gravity machines as one of the proofs that the Spirit is unchained.

The conclusion of this argument is that the Spirit will be unchained at the moment that this quantity of knowledge is published-it is necessary to let his powers of recognition come into being. Exactly where this knowledge comes from is not in the least bit important; as soon as it is there, the blockade is lifted. The spiritual reality is difficult to explain in words but I hope in some way to have-been successful.

The second condition which has to be put on this publication is that the knowledge and purpose of the Son AND Satan must be released. The giving up of the blockade requires the unchaining of both opposing forces so that the power of recognition for Satan must be planted also. From this conclusion it must be apparent that the publication of this knowledge concerns us all.

If the story of creation turns out to be true then not only the Spirit of Truth but also its counterpart will be unchained and the development will be set in motion, as described earlier. Then the spiritual principle of a self-fulfilling prophecy will become clear.

If this publication unveils the Truth then the Spirit will be unchained, so that a new absolute polarization will come to exist within humanity, for or against the Christ. The coming happenings are not to be stopped, clairvoyance is no longer necessary to predict that now that the spirit of Satan is freed he will immediately take possession of those who are predestined for that and in whom Satan is already incarnate.

The Individual Incarnation of the Spirit

The next question which arises is whether or not the Spirit of Truth and the spirit of lies will be incarnated as individuals. At first sight that seems superfluous for they will incarnate as the self-awareness of Jesus and Satan and thus they acquire their human quality. But that is not enough, these spirits still have a separate creation-task, that is to take possession of all the people who have their respective identities.

But still this is no argument for an individual incarnation, even if they have a separate and independent task, they will incarnate in all people, a more complete incarnation is unimaginable. Theoretically the Spirit of Truth should not need an individual incarnation; He does not overpower but takes pity on those who ask for it. He is not egocentric, He wants the unity of all people and does not seek power, but his counterpart is just the other way round. Just like the spirit of Lucifer (first generation) he wants "Sole" rule, he is exclusively selfish and *has* to have great personal power in order to conquer. The objective of egoism therefore makes the individual incarnation of the Spirit of lies (of Satan) necessary.

Through the law of counterbalance of absolute Consciousnesses the Spirit of Truth must then also become an individual at some point, since the Objective of the Spirit does not prevent it. Thus it can be reasoned that the Spirit of Truth as well as his counterpart will incarnate as an individual. With that the confirmation was given of a stubborn misunderstanding which, it seems to me, comes from occult circles, that during the final phase we can expect the second coming of Jesus Christ and even that He will be there already. The Person whom they perceive is actually not the Son of Man but His Spirit, his SELF-awareness, in fact, and that difference is not noticed in occult observation. Both People stand, as it were, in each other's line.

The law of counterbalance dictates not only the necessity that two counterparts both incarnate but also the necessity that these incarnations are simultaneous. This demands some explanation because in reality there are so many restrictions that it seldom happens simultaneously. If, for example, the Son is born on a planet with a closed cycle then, because of the reincarnation selection there would be no disciples of Satan living in order to allow Satan to incarnate.

Then Satan must be called up through a special intervention, but that happens later, thus not simultaneously. If Satan should incarnate prematurely on earth through the low polarization-level of a particular group (Sodom and Gomorrah) then the Son could not have incarnated at the same time since there was no living person who fulfilled the requirements, thus it would not have been simultaneous.

When, however, through a special Intervention on earth the Son incarnated, his Awakening of Consciousness took place at the end of forty days of fasting in the wilderness, then Satan was also there because it was no problem for him to find someone who belonged to him, so then it was simultaneous.

In fact the simultaneity depends on the availability of a particular person and thus it is established that the Spirit of Truth and that of lies will incarnate at the same time. In the final phase on earth both the disciples of Satan and a number of the chosen ones of Christ will be living, so that the requirement of availability will be fulfilled.

Immediately this question follows: When will this happen? Before this question can be answered the Spirit's way of working must be described. To begin with this is in two parts; in the first place He is the knowledge and Self-awareness, and the power of recognition of the Son himself (or Satan), through which He comes to self recognition and awakening of consciousness. Besides that the Spirit has a second and purely individual Objective, and that is to bring all real people (or, respectively Satan's disciples) to recognition, choice and unanimity.

This also certainly demands the necessary explanation. The first point is easy to understand; first the Son, or Satan, must be there before we can be in a position to recognize Him. During His life the Spirit is a part of the Personality of the Son, a two-in-one process just as a human is-soul and spirit. He helped the Son to fulfil the identification procedure in the life of Jesus, He was his wisdom, knowledge and power

over life and death.

Without the Spirit the Son will be only the Love-pole, and immeasurable love-power in being. He needed someone to make Him recognizable, and the same goes for Satan. Then it was not the hands of the Son which were bound, but those of His Spirit.

If He is the Spirit of Jesus Christ why is he not called so? Why did Jesus speak in the third person when He told us that He would send the Helper? (John 15,26) The reason is that the Spirit has a separate and individual creation-task and at first sight that is nothing special since the same applies to our own individual spirit. Our spirit creates the collective human knowledge-awareness, in death we are only spirit without our love-power, and this collective Spirit of Truth, will created unanimity through His knowledge and powers of recognition-- without the love-power, without the Son. In the Person of Jesus He fulfils His identification, the beginning, but to follow up He has to be able to operate independently as a completely separate Person. Now His hands are no longer tied and He is a powerful Source of inspiration for every person who opens himself to Him. Everyone who recognizes Christ as the Way, the Truth and the Life has the Spirit and as such He was and will incarnate.

Nonetheless, according to the law of contradiction, He will also become an individual person in one of the first chosen ones of Christ. It seems superfluous, for these 144,000 have, by definition, the Spirit, but in this special cycle on earth this incarnation definitely seems purposeful considering the point of time at which He will appear. On this subject the following words can be stated confidently: from the above it follows that He can come only when the entire identification procedure of Jesus Christ is completed and thus, when His Hands are no longer tied. Now the Spirit is unchained so that theoretically He could be here. But there is another restriction, one which comes from the compensation of Satan, mentioned earlier as a result of the unnatural Intervention on earth; the blocking! Satan must not be in a back-seat position through the premature Coming of Jesus, and that excludes the possibility of an earlier incarnation of the Spirit of Truth. Thus it must happen simultaneously (or later).

The Incarnation of the Spirit of Lies

Now is the waiting for the other spirit but his incarnation is exactly predictable, i.e. at the moment that the antichrist has fulfilled the identification procedure. That will be when he has subjected the earth to himself as the beloved saviour of the world. Will he then also have to die or leave like Christ to make the way free for his spirit? No, Satan does not die before the end and even less can he go away because he belongs to the earth and its solar-system's matter-consciousness, he is materially bound and comes OUT of the earth. He cannot even leave when the earth implodes into a black hole. What happens to him when his spirit withdraws and manifests in a separate person?

He remains on earth as a person but without his spirit-only with the memory 9f it, without direct power, without knowledge and insight, thus only with the possibility for self4ove of the earth-and solar-system matter. He can then be visualized as a person with

a black-out, temporarily robbed of his aggressive-ness and knowledge, with only the wish to receive love and to be worshipped.

This period will be very instructive for us to understand what the spirit is now, in relation to Satan himself. He will be an individual person, the false prophet, which can be described as the spiritual aggression of Satan, but without the love-power. He perpetrates no self4ove but stimulates, creates and directs the love of real people on the self-love pole: the true Satan. He does not allow himself to be worshipped but compels others to worship Satan. Without this knowledge it is impossible to understand this phenomenon

Where does he leave Satan with his black-out at that time? He cannot appear with him in public any more because selfish people no longer understand anything about him. The powerful saviour after whom they had all followed in wonderment is changed into a person who has no power, does not go out any more, makes no more stirring speeches and is turned in on himself. Still the false prophet will want him to be worshipped and that seems to be a difficult problem, but the solution appears in Revelations. He puts Satan in an image and allows that to be worshipped.

Many will ask why this complication is necessary, why was Satan not simply left in possession of his spirit? He could not complete his consciousness if his spirit was not free. the spirit bound to the self-love pole, the complete Satan, strived for power, acknowledgement and worship, but did not tempt people in direct sense. The spirit 'alone' on the other hand leads, organizes, stimulates, persuades and deceives.

The most particular feature of the false prophet is his speech, which is the argument of the failed man in optimal form. He does everything with his mouth; he argues, persuades and brings about all manner of disastrous things, but lets others do the dirty work. He is the most dangerous of this unholy pair, the antichrist is in fact the false prophet. Satan is only out for power and admiration and acquires that slowly enough to remain credible to the people.

For verification it is worthwhile reading Revelations 13,7-15. When the beast has acquired dominion over every tribe and nation, language and people, a second beast will rise from out of the earth 'and he exercise the all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders.… saying to them that dwell on the earth that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should.… speak'.

The Incarnation of the Spirit of Truth

After all the disastrous announcements which I have had to make it is now a great privilege and a great pleasure to announce to you the present most powerful Personality of the whole universe who comes to help all intelligent races, the Spirit of Truth incarnate.

The heavenly armies follow him because here on earth he has dual identity with the Spirit Q. He has the Spirit of all intelligent races who have already reached completion and is thus the equivalent of the Spirit of God. His name sounds 'The Word of God' because he too operates verbally in the first instance. His speech is such a manifestation of power and superiority that it can be described as a two-edged sword which comes from his mouth destroying his opposors. He will call into being a manifestation of spiritual and moral rearmament in humanity, which is far beyond our powers of imagination and which will ultimately destroy the antichrist and the false prophet.

He comes at the zenith of the satanic explosion of God-hatred which will be let loose by the false prophet-thus just before the end. He comes too late to be able to warn us and therefore it was necessary to break open the isolation of the earth by means of an -outside intervention before the evil had occurred. He is Spirit and works with the huge power of universal thought, knowledge and insight. It will be an all-encompassing spiritual process and therefore extremely effective. He does not come to do it for us, he is only the Helper, we will have to do it for ourselves. He creates the spiritual preparedness-already a piece of the unanimity-through which we will be in a state to resist the antichrist.

He is and remains a purely human-bound Spirit, 'our' Helper, Who during the thousand year Reign will have the Self-awareness of the collective spirit of humanity and as such will be our awareness of truth and our power of recognition. But He too will be unchained in the sense that his Hands will no longer be tied so that he will bring us to the full Truth. At least, if the allied race which made this intervention can indeed speak in the name of the Spirit Q and proclaim the real Truth. In that too we must still look critically.

He will create a wave of courage and trust which will make heroes of millions of people and in which many will be saved for the Kingdom on earth. Once he has come He will remain with us forever and guide us to eternal happiness.

For a biblical verification see Revelations 19,11-21, the knight on the white horse.

What Possibility of Choice Do We Still Have?

Time is a creation and through it the future is decided. It is also decided for all time which people will fail and therefore nothing can be changed. Although this declaration is completely correct it alters nothing of the fact that pre-knowledge of the creating Intellect is not relevant for us. Stronger still, we have nothing to do with it for it is also the foreknowledge concerning all action which humanity will undertake to save people. We can intervene positively and there is no excuse whatever for abandoning our obligation in this.

What is there to be saved? A person is a chance creation within the environment of earth which is also a chance creation and he makes a choice out of an inborn desire for good or for evil. During this life he/she identifies himself with one or the other and thus the choice is made. What do we still want to change in that?

We can change a lot. Think for a moment of all the children and young people who have not yet fulfilled their second period of consciousness awakening and who have not yet made achoice. Few people have from childhood onwards pronounced preference for good or evil and thus many people are easily influenced. This is again an environmentally determined chance creation so if we want to change something we must do something about the influence of the environment.

It is not only the youth who need help. If the tendency for good or evil is the result of an uncontrolled process of successive chance creations then a situation of balance comes about in which the tendency is equally strong in both directions. This group forms a small percentage but is very vulnerable. If through circumstances they are active and work on the development of their talents then the previously mentioned personality change takes place, though which they acquire their divine identity, but there is another group of doubting Thomases who waver on the threshold. Their percentage is perhaps negligible, but their total runs into millions.

They are the lazy but working profiteers, the lovers of ease who try to avoid everything which takes trouble. They are neither flesh nor fowl, sometimes they are in their fourth or fifth lives, their laziness remains dominant, but on the other hand they do not deny the Spirit and they refuse, from a hesitant tendency for good, to affirm their satanic identity. They can still fall either way. This group of doubters has still not fulfilled the mixture of talents, they still have no immortal soul and therefore are subject to the law of reincarnation (cause and effect). As explained earlier, these people, just like Satan's disciples, will all be living during the final phase. They can be adults or even old people, but they must still choose and are therefore just as vulnerable as the young who are in their first life and have no burden of guilt from former lives.

Teenagers before or during their second awakening of consciousness are particularly vulnerable and at this time of mental poisoning they must receive the antidote in the form of the correct insight and norms. The same goes for all doubters from all times who are living now. For them the knowledge about the Judgement could be their deliverance.

The Purpose of Knowledge of the Final Phase

Although the purpose is already apparent from the foregoing information, it is useful to define it more precisely. It is actually the same purpose as that of all true religions throughout the ages, namely the avoidance of the denial of the Spirit and the reduction of the purification-suffering through obedience to God. This requires some explanation since the knowledge of the final phase is not a religion.

To begin: the first purpose, the avoidance of the denial, requires a new vigour, the spiritual and moral defence against the lies and aggression of universal evil. We will have to pounce upon the conspiracy which has spread evil on Earth. The great danger now is that people without a personal relationship with God will busy themselves with this spiritual and moral rearmament and thus reverse cause and effect. The spiritual readiness of the Spirit of Truth exists only through a personal relationship with God.

On the other hand, knowledge is the supreme aid for building up a personal relationship with God, and for some people it is even a religious experience. Certainly for a relationship it is necessary to get to know the other and, even more important than the external is to know his objectives. What does he want, what does he strive for which concerns me? The only way to know the Father and to be able to love Him is to know his Objectives. Note here the direct connection between the story of creation and the personal relationship with the Father.

Therefore it is necessary that His Aims should be published with a certain emphasis and that requires initially the destruction of atheism.

The age of ignorance is gone for good. This is a call to the more intellectually developed readers to help to complete the proof of God, to fill out the hiatus and to take part in discussions. Without massive help this cannot succeed.

The result serves as the evidence in the personal talks with words which challenge to further thought or discussion, in particular with young people. The direct purpose must be the creation of wonder and thankfulness to the Father in personal conversation with Him.

Thus it is important to know that every person has his transformation-original, the divine spark within us which can be defined as the smallest fragment of consciousness of the Father Himself. Thus, each person has, as it were, a direct 'telephone line' to Him and we can speak to Him directly at a~ times even if He does not answer. In the Plan it was determined that the angel within us can never manifest itself in our day-consciousness (unless there is a very high grade of polarization), because otherwise our freedom of choice would be destroyed.

It is to be hoped for that we will have taught each other to pray again when the final phase tests begin -- and not just the Lord's. Prayer. Here lies the emphasis on the interpersonal conversation out of a feeling of respect and dependence.

Is this then an argument for a new kind of religion outside the Church? The answer can he neither yes nor no. Once the relationship with God is there, the risk of the denial of the Spirit and thus the failure of people disappears. For those who have grown up without any relationship with God or any connection with the Church or religion this is so important that everyone can be satisfied with it. It must be regarded as wrong to make this process difficult by setting any further conditions. As such the answer is yes.

The second aim of the knowledge of the final phase is the reduction of the purification suffering and that comes about through obedience to divine Laws, as explained earlier. The consolidation of a personal relationship with God takes place through the self-denial which obedience demands. Considering that we cannot make these Laws ourselves it follows from the story of creation that we seek attachment to or joining with one of the existing (true) religions, or respectively a fastening to the present beliefs, to intensify our religious experience more than ever. The knowledge of the final phase is not a belief or a religion; it gives no laws or rules of life but it refers to the existing religions. As such the

answer is no.

The Purpose of True Religions

The breaking open of the isolation of earth must never result in the attacking or weakening of the great world religions. My teachers never ceased to warn against this. At first sight that is completely logical -- if the purpose is the personal relationship with God then the existing relationships must under no circumstance be damaged. On the other hand this danger is created by themselves, and to a huge extent. Their story of creation knows only one Purpose: The Son and ourselves must all reach the Consciousness of the One Christ, ultimately even cosmic consciousness. For those who know that, there exists but one religion - Christianity!

This last is totally wrong for 99% of humanity, that is for those who were not chosen for the first Kingdom. As a logically thinking person it caused me a great deal of trouble to see the fault in this, but now I see it. It is actually a fault in thinking which arises from an incorrect definition of the word 'religion'.

In the cosmic meaning of the word, religion is simply personal service to God and nothing more for the argumentation (teaching) is only a means to achieve the personal service.

Here we must all, as disobedient earth beings who know better, switch over to the way of thinking of the obedient cosmic beings, for otherwise their explanation will be impossible to understand. On the planets with a closed cycle the whole race obeys the divine laws absolutely meticulously. There is one religion, one Law and thus one personal service to God. In fact there are no teachings or theological discussions there but only the feeling of dependence and attachment to the One God whom they either know personally or whose existence is not doubted. Only with an 'own boss' cycle there exists the argument or teaching of 'why' and 'how' God must be served personally - as such it is necessary, but it is still only a means to an end. Rituals help the recognition of the teachings.

If the Son incarnates on a planet with a closed cycle, then the race has already achieved a very high level of unselfishness. He brings them to the full Truth ad the impact of that is greater than here because they do not know the division between good and evil. Through gaining the knowledge of the creation plan, what sin is, of the Judgement and justice they eat of the Tree of knowledge of good and evil and become independent, their own boss. The purification, the reconciliation and the completion they also do completely under their own power. Just as on earth, here too the effect of this knowledge of the final phase is that true obedience will be destroyed. If someone knows why, he/she must be obedient, according to the divine valuation it is not obedience any more but the goal-consciousness of the (team) Spirit and that is precisely the Son's objective. The old divine Law must be obeyed exactly as before and he changes not a word of it Thus the personal service to God (religion) remains unchanged, even though it now comes from conscious conviction. Thus the old divine Guidance remains completely

intact, a huge help towards driving out the demoniac and reducing the suffering.

Also on earth the old divine Guidance of Jahwe will be restored to its full range during the thousand year Reign. In Mathew 5, 17-18 Jesus says that He has not come to destroy the (Jewish) Law and. Prophets but to fulfil l them; For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one title shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled.

In the thousand year Reign, the strict observance of the Law will seem to be in a position to completely replace the purification suffering.

In fact it is totally irrelevant WHICH divine Law will be obeyed. In the divine evaluation of a religion only the extent of the personal service to God is a factor and an exact judgement of the truth of the teachings plays no part at all. Another conclusion is that the value of the present belief is greater than the belief which comes out of the knowledge of the final phase. True belief was the acceptance of something on the authority of divine command without knowing why and that was the real obedience in thought. In contrast, the knowledge of the final phase creates not belief but insight and in this context that is something quite different.

During the final phase all people, living and dead, will come to know the antichrist as the ruler of the world and then the Christ as the King in the thousand year Reign. We will all be able to choose freely but still the result is fixed in advance, for no real person chooses for the monster.

Thus it is unimportant whether in former lives we were Christians, Jews, Muslims, Buddhists or atheists, this division no longer exists. In the second or great Resurrection we will all be true Christians or anti-Christians; neutrality does not exist here. Other religions are other paths to the same objective.

In Righteousness He Doth Make War *(Revelations 19, 11)*

The building up and the affirmation of a personal relationship with God is the condition for making the goal-consciousness of the Spirit come into existence and which manifests itself as spiritual and moral preparedness against the activities of universal evil. Earlier the new polarization was mentioned, which will come into existence through the breaking open of the earth's isolation. Thus it is natural to suppose that this polarization will be let loose by the adepts of evil. Until now the power of evil has appeared as the more aggressive and dominant; mental poisoning, criminality and profiteering quickly win ground, whereas good is not worth a newspaper article.

The close of the dictation will certainly cause some surprise because the roles will now be reversed, the polarization will be set in motion by good, together with the awakening of consciousness of the woman.

On the other hand it is easy to understand that if the power of evil is already so aggressive and dominant, the polarization can only be occasioned through the power of good. The purpose is to set in motion the mobilization of the silent majority through a new vigour.

Why is that necessary? The earth will already be bothered by many social, political and ideological polarizations, must there be an absolute polarization too? People of good-will stimulate tolerance, not polarization and certainly not fanaticism.

It is not so much a question of wanting something as of something which is going to complete itself The Spirit is unchained and He goes his on way. He wages war through righteousness and preaches intolerance of universal evil. This war is about saving people from a fall to eternal death, and then tolerance is complicity.

People who know the Judgement cannot remain in 'their chairs doing nothing when they observe the mental poisoning on radio, TV or in newspapers which destroy young people. Silence is then complicity. The polarization completes itself unwished and unavoidably and therefore the discussion of it desirability is senseless. Automatically those who know the Truth, will start to contact each other.

In many places information centres will be set up from where local talk-groups and action groups will be formed and coordinated. The urgent advice about this is to select the members of these groups according to their identity.

Allow only those people in who can be reasonably accepted -- also on the grounds of their own declaration, that they have a personal relationship with God.

The great danger that will deceive these groups is the tendency for violence and that must be avoided in this selection. We are still in the mobilization period and we must never give cause for violence. Only when the Spirit of truth (of Christ) come will war be declared, his vesture is dipped in blood.

The Superiority of the Subordinate Woman

The new role of woman is predestined in the development of mankind. The present emancipation movement which is manifesting mainly in the western world is the result of this. The knowledge of the final phase tries to point this process of self-consciousness in the right direction, from the difference in creation task between man and woman. For the man it is the talents of the spirit and for the woman the talents of the soul. She will appear superior in her power to restrain and conquer universal evil. This is a call to the subordinate woman with a personal relationship with God to take the lead in the coming process of spiritual and moral rearmament in the Spirit of Truth. They are created by God for this task and it is not for the man to dispute that.

This is not a negation of her task of serving in respect to the man, but the affirmation that it is her task to lead the attack against evil in this world. Thus she serves first to create order in her own ranks and especially where the word emancipations seems to be an open invitation for selfish behaviour, free sex, free abortion or for the neglect of her family. She serves to free herself from the satanic indoctrination which supposedly aims for the equalization of man and woman but which in fact aims for the elimination of the woman. She must become conscious of her own identity and be prepared to accept a certain amount of subordination to be able to claim the right to leadership in the fight against evil. She must not do that out of the illusion of creating a better world but just to

avoid a further slide.

In the first place the attack must be launched on the publicity media which contribute to the present mental poisoning or satanic indoctrination. In this we must not be afraid of attacking people - the originators of it. For them the admission to all forms of publicity media must be blocked. That is equally an act of love of humanity when it concerns real people. They indirectly deny the Spirit and the guilt which they lay on themselves is horrible, because of the great number of people they reach. They can cause so much! On the other hand, they must not be discouraged if they want to recall previous pronouncements.

The second place is reserved for the fight against laziness, inactivity and boredom of the young. Youth unemployment is the greatest enemy of humanity which should have the greatest priority. In the same breath we can mention prison sentences, drug and alcohol addiction amongst the young, which stimulates all the laziness and boredom. Prison sentences should be replaced as soon as possible by work-therapy, compulsory if necessary, preferably based on social service or the learning of creative skills - then the procurement of work.

Addiction to alcohol and especially to drugs lead to a compulsive selfishness and laziness and even to defencelessness against the demonic part of our dualism. This leads to the failure of people in the final phase because there will be no further life for correction. It is literally fatal. Therefore compulsory habit-breaking cures and work therapy are not cruel, they are to save people, including children, from eternal exclusion.

A gigantic problem which my teachers clearly play down is the atomic and germ arms race. On the one hand the complete inadmissibility of a massive destruction and on the other hand the threat of a loathsome ungodly society, the embodiment of universal evil: communism. a Satan system of subordination which shuts off all freedom, inventiveness and creativity of the majority and gives 'priority' only to a small select group of the 'chosen'.

The attitude of my teachers is laconic, we will have to accustom our selves to the idea that the earth will be ruled at some point by universal evil and that the armed and armoured hordes of the antichrist will come from east. Even total destruction could never avert the fact that we will learn to know the antichrist as the ruler of the world because it is preordained in the Word.

In the last case a very special operation must be executed, about which no information was given. The only thing I understood was that “Nature would interfere”. The atomic or germ warfare remains inadmissible, the latter at least as dangerous as the first.

End of dictation.

IARGA GREETS THE EARTH, WE WISH YOU COURAGE AND TRUST.

Note from the editor of the foundation “cosmic field paradigm”:

Let us remind you that this edition was prepared for publication around 1975. So even though his dictate is not from this Earth, during its writing Denaerde tried to make sense of this information.

Especially in this chapter he gave his views in the context of that time. In our opinion nearly all his views are still valuable nowadays, but let us exercise our own judgement.

APPENDIX 1

An Analogue Model

Introduction

This appendix is not a part of the story of the Creation which is explained in religious terms in Chapter 1 (Part 2). It is a complementary way of reasoning to prove the existence of God, using the concepts of time, matter and energy. These concepts are also used in physics. The problem which now arises is that the author will use physical concepts without understanding the real meaning of the words, because he is not a specialist. The words atom, atom-field, matter, etc., must all be understood within the context of this book and they have no direct connection with the ideas used in modern science. Especially the words "matter" and "atom" are most confusing, because the Iargan author knows about the existence of matter in three configurations (and its opposite possibilities as anti-matter); i.e., time-matter, phase matter and reflection-matter (the one we know about in our universe), but he fails to interpret these concepts due to his lack of knowledge of physics. He only knows that these forms of matter are all related to one or none of the directions of time-propagation of the atom of which time is fundamentally three dimensional. It therefore determines in which form these configurations can exist in our universe.

In this appendix time-creation out of NOTHING is described by making use of the concept of more time dimensions. The explanation of time-creation is very difficult because it uses an overall carrier-field of infinite strength and then this concept is called the cosmic unified field theory. In defining this term one has to be careful, because this theory is of a different basic nature from the existing unified field theories here on earth. Our unified field theories try to unify the four basic forces in nature, which are the electro-magnetic, the weak strong nuclear force and gravitation. The unified field theories accepted by most prominent scientists find their origin in the general relativity theory of Einstein, which itself explains matter and energy in terms of space and time.

The problem now is to find a method explaining the spiritual or esoteric reality, the cosmic time field. On other planets this problem was solved by explaining the basic concepts of the cosmic unified field theory. The elementary functions of these concepts can be understood with a mechanical instruction model demonstrating the cosmic time field visually.

Why indulge in this complication of describing a theory which will probably only be fully grasped by a few individuals? It does not concern the author very much, he only carries out his commission. His Iargan instructors gave three reasons for publishing the concepts of this theory:

1. The future integration of science and religion requires a material proof of God's

existence. This explanation could be the start of the exchange between these two.

2. In the previous story of Creation the limitation of the infinite is explained unambiguously, but the working principle was completely neglected.
3. The cosmic unified field theory published in this book will be the only possible verification for the true identity of this book, providing the link for the future development of the human race.

The physical approximation of the NOTHING.

One concept in physics is that all atoms and energy consist of vibrations and wave appearances. In a material way every atom or form of energy is caused by vibration. The physical approximation describes the nothing of the idea of vibration and does not touch on the spiritual aspects and the consciousness of matter. It does not distinguish between the "nothing" and the spiritual "No-Thing" (the ALL). It only recognizes the material aspects of the nothing.

If everything is vibrations or waves, then it is not necessary to speak of matter or energy, then Creation is fundamentally based on this concept of vibration. The primeval vibration (before the limitation) can be described as infinite in time, infinite in all its aspects and possibilities, infinite in frequency and amplitude and existing in all time directions (omni-time). Unchanging, timeless and powerful to all limited vibrations in every bound power. It is the omnipotent definition.

In this approximation nothing is more simple to understand. Before the Creation the infinite omnipotent vibration existed, but a vibration in every direction and of infinite frequency and amplitude is not a vibration. The apparent paradox can be eliminated by stating: Only at the instant when this infinite vibration blocks itself by interference, as in a flash, all bound waves and frequencies were created. This condition is very close to the existential view of the Creation out of NOTHING in Chapter 1.

The nothing (here) has no counteraction, but in contrast the omnipotent vibration can manifest itself only by counter-acting in such a way that the infinite allows the nothing to be. So one can also state that all vibrations were created because the nothing bound itself by a mechanism of interference quenching (counteracting vibrations) of infinite force, which blocked the infinite possibilities of these vibrations. This universe can only be considered as the limitation of the unbounded nothing.

The bounding of the omnipotent infinite vibration, the cosmic time field.

One of the basic principles on which the mechanism of bounding is based is: If one property of a power (any power) of something is bound, then all properties and powers of this something will be bound. In infinity the finite cannot exist. To limit the omnipotent vibration it was sufficient to bind only one of the perhaps infinite number of possibilities. Because if only just a little something were to be formed in the nothing, the nothing would be altered and cancelled irrevocably, then the complete finity was a fact.

OR, if there were just the three-dimensional rotating time field as a possibility of the primeval atom in the infinity of the nothing then the finite was a fact. This atom-field needed to be a force-field of infinite strength, the carrier-field, to counteract the omnipotent vibration, the cosmic time field.

The Creation can only exist as a result of counter-balance.

One of the functions of the carrier-field is time-synchronization by which the cosmic counter-action and therefore the nothing can BE. Matter and energy cannot exist on its own in the nothing. The principle of time synchronization is given:

1. Time is only relative, it is motion or propagation in relation to at least a second motion of time.
1. The cosmic law of counterbalance dictates that the second time has to counterbalance the first time. So time can only exist in relation to a second exact opposite direction of time (running backwards in relation to our time).
2. Time exists only through the presence of atoms or matter. Then the backward running time can only exist through matter in which the time propagation is opposite, running backwards in relation to us (anti-time matter). Anti-matter or reflection anti-matter may exist in our universe with an opposite electric charge with respect to our known reflection matter. The question as to which charge anti-time matter has in the anti-universe, is of no importance in this appendix.
3. Because neither matter nor energy can exist on its own in the nothing another quantity of matter of opposite properties must exist which is exactly similar to that in our universe. This balance of matter and energy is so accurate, that one surplus atom is impossible.

This explains nearly as per definition the cosmic law of counter-balance allowing the nothing to be. There must be at least a second universe exactly like ours, in which time runs backwards according to us, but normally for life in that universe. In the following it is shown that there are not just two, but eleven other universes in addition to ours necessary to maintain the cosmic law of counter-balance.

The time-synchronisation field.

The law of counter-balance also applies to time. The time-direction is opposite and the time velocity is equal to ours. Time is the propagation of vibrations of the atom. Then the atom-vibrations in both universes are equal and opposite with respect to the timelessness. This is only possible if these times are caused by one field (time field).

The definition of a field (any field in physics) is: If an event occurs, because another event takes place somewhere else without a mechanical or visible connection between these events, then these events are caused by a field. Time-synchronization occurs according to this definition. The atom vibrations in our universes are exactly similar, because the atom vibrations of our anti-universe occur despite the enormous difference in time and without any dissipation of energy. It is about 30 billion years since the

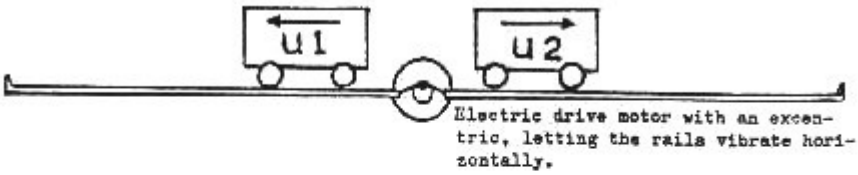
occurrence of the super flash Creation (big bang) between the two universes.

The law of conservation of counter-balance is causal to the law of energy conservation in every universe. Each universe is a closed system and without energy dissipation outside itself. The amount of matter and energy once created remains constant. A loss of energy is impossible, because our time-bound energy propagates forwards, while the time-bound matter and energy of the anti-universe propagate backwards in time. These universes are separated by a time-barrier through which no communication nor transfer of life is known.

What is a timeless vibration or wave?

The question is how the field functions maintain the timesynchronization of the atom-waves between the universes separated by billions of years. It is only possible if the synchronization stands still in time, but exists simultaneously in all the time elapsed since the beginning of the super flash, as well in all the future. A timeless vibration does not normally move in time, the amplitudes of the field propagation alternate forwards and backwards in time. Time synchronization is the principle by which our universe catches every forward-moving amplitude and the anti-universe catches every backward moving amplitude of one and the same timeless wave.

On other planets there are simple mechanical models explaining the function of time-synchronization. One such model is very similar to our well-known mini-model rail upon which are two little wagons. The model has two lengths of rail of say 1.50 meters each, which are in direct line with each other (see figure).



Rail and wagon model demonstrating the principle of the timeless waves. The vibration is present at any point of the rail and at any time during the whole process period. Also from the moment of the super flash until the end of all times (ALWAYS).

The rails are mounted on small springs to allow them to vibrate forwards and backwards in horizontal direction (from left to right and vice versa in the figure). The two rails are connected to a little electric motor with a double eccentric, each driving one rail, letting the rails vibrate about 1 millimetre of linear distance, also backwards and forwards. The amplitude is small enough to be invisible to the eye.

Then one little wagon is placed on each rail and each wagon has a catch with a catch wheel on one of the wheel axes, so the wagon can ride in only one direction. The movement in the other direction is blocked. The wagons are placed with their rears

against each other, after which the electric motor is switched on. If the teeth of the catch wheel have the same beat as the vibrator mechanism, the wagons roll away from each other with exactly the same speed to the end of each rail.

With this simple model time synchronization for the atom-vibrations of both departing universes (in time) by a timeless field always existing everywhere" has been demonstrated sufficiently. At the same time a flaw comes to light. It is impossible to maintain an energy time flux of the time field for the two departing universes, because where is then the inexhaustible energy source to maintain the time-flux?

This is one of the reasons that a one dimensional time field is not possible. Only a three dimensional time field which encloses the energy time-flux in itself allows our universe and the others to exist.

The principle (mechanism) to create finity:--INTERFERENCE.

So far the function of time-synchronization of the carrier-field has been considered. Now we will discuss the medium of con-serving and maintaining the timeless vibration into eternity. It is the infinite force field carrying all matter and energy.

We are at the moment of the flash or big bang, the moment at which the infinite primeval vibration limited (transmuted) itself to the carrier-field. This mechanism of blocking is well known and based on the principle of wave interference. (Interference of light waves is important today in laser technology.) Interference is the action or counter-action of two or more waves. If the wave-propagation is opposite and parallel and the frequencies of the waves equal, mutual amplification or attenuation of the intensities of the wave is possible, depending on the phase relation between these waves.

If the phases are opposite and the amplitudes of the waves are equal, total quenching is possible. This is the principle of the binding of infinity. If an infinite wave manifests itself in one time-direction, automatically the equivalent absolute counter-action is created which counter-balances the infinity, allowing the nothing to be.

The infinite primeval wave blocked itself at the moment it created itself and so it never existed in reality. It was in fact a transmutation of infinity*;* the transmutation of the infinite vibration of infinite amplitude and frequency to a carrier-field of infinite strength, which blocked itself by interference.

The time-bound vibrations or waves.

The primeval wave blocked itself in a three dimensional time-axis system (propagation directions) by interference, and transmuted to an infinite, timeless, immobile force-field. How could the bound timeless waves exist, which synchronize our universe?

It is an error of thinking to suppose that by quenching the omnipotent vibration all finite waves were also cancelled. It is just the opposite. A vibration with infinite frequency is not a vibration in reality. The infinite prevented the vibration, because a vibration can only exist in the finite. As soon as infinity was removed, the prevention disappeared and the real bound wave was a possibility. It is the carrier force-field although of infinite

strength and energy density which gets its finite value due to interference quenching. All timeless waves are as it were encapsulated in infinity and therefore indestructible. However "belonging" to infinity and not bound by time themselves, they create time forever; they are the eternal ripples on the static, unchangeable and loss-free field of infinite strength.

Because of this, all time-bound waves such as light, radio-waves or gravitation, exist in space without any loss and it is the empty space in the universe, which is the non-modulated structure of the carrier-field. It is one of the most fantastic touches of genius of Creation, that the non-vibrating infinity was transmutated to a loss-free medium carrying all time-bound and timeless waves. A few properties of this medium can be measured with instruments, the other part of its structure cannot be objectively observed yet, it is the esoteric fluidum or the infinite Love-will of the Father which carries the whole Creation.

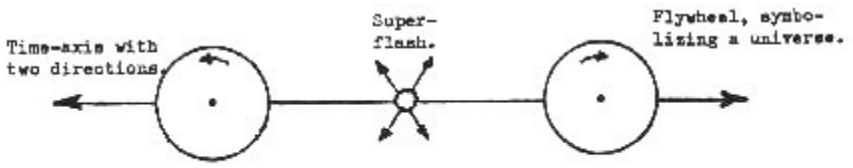
The unimaginable three dimensional time.

One time-axis counter-balances only one direction of time propagation of the omnipotent wave. In infinity all possibilities of vibration exist and therefore all time-propagation directions. The question is, could infinity be limited by just one time-direction and one coexisting propagation direction going the opposite way?

One way to answer this was already given in the previous paragraph, in which it was stated that the energy time-flux of the primeval wave of two universes is not a closed system. Another plausible answer can be by simply reasoning.

The atom is causal for the time- and space dimensions, due to its time-creating properties, already mentioned. The space-creating properties are easy to understand, because the atom takes up space. It is three-dimensional in space and therefore it creates space in three dimensions. If all atoms were two-dimensional then the whole of creation would have been on a plane and space would not have been more than a flat or curved plane. Our time-space is no more than a bound part of the n~ thing being filled with matter or energy. Anything that space distinguishes of the time - and - dimensionless void is caused by atoms or energy. If atoms have three space dimensions, then the timeless waves creating the atoms also have three dimensions.

1. The timeless primeval atom-field has three time dimensions.
2. The timeless waves could not be bound by only one time-axis, but must necessarily have three time-axes.
3. The timeless atom-field should consist of a three dimensional rotating field of infinite strength, which is attenuated of itself by interference. It conserves the law of cosmic counter-balance of the nothing. The atom of such a rotating field structure has six time-axes, but in principle these six axes can always be reduced to three time-dimensions, no further reduction is possible.



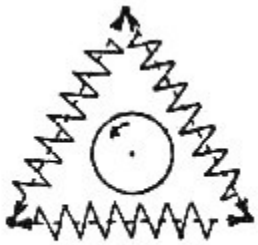
The cosmic symbol of one time-axis.

In the following paragraphs of the analogue carrier-field model it is shown, why the atom-field has to be a three dimensional and not a two-dimensional field.

The six time-axes of the time-creating, cosmic carrier field.

How can it be established that the carrier-field of all matter in twelve universes has six time-axes? The first part of the answer is simple to explain. A well-known type of rotating field on earth is that of the electric three-phase synchronous motor.

This type of electromagnetic-field system consists of three linear magnetic-fields which are arranged at angles of 120 round a rotor. The phase-differences of the three alternating magnetic-fields, which have the same frequencies (say 50 Hz) are also at each 120 degrees. Each alternating field is in itself an exact linear vibration oriented in one direction. The rotating field exists only if the three linear vibrations are combined together with the proper phase relation between them. So a two-dimensional rotating field in space is created. It can force a piece of magnetic material to rotate around its axis with a great power.



The principle of an electric three-phase synchronous motor.

The fact that it is possible to create rotating fields by combining three linear alternating waves does not mean that it has to be the same for fields of infinite strength, it can be more than three, but it is not very likely as first guess, because the three wave-principle (the equilateral triangle) is the most simple and effective. According this principle, for a three dimensional field six linear waves are required to form an equilateral triangular pyramid, but why an angle of 60 degrees between time-axes?

The first answer can initially be given in a very simple way, the second is more complicated, but at least more to the point.

A simple way of reasoning to derive the answer to the question of 60 degrees is the following. The atom field of matter has spatial structure, therefore the time-axes must be positioned in such a way that they form a closed three dimensional geometric object,

because the energy fluxes of time must be closed in itself due to the law of counter-balance.

The time-axes form straight lines, which cannot be parallel lines, because parallel time-axes form one and the same time-direction. The most simple three-dimensional closed object is an equilateral triangular pyramid. There are no reasons to suppose it should be an a-symmetric pyramid if three dimensional time is considered, on the contrary, it must be symmetrical in all positions. So it is simply a equilateral triangular pyramid of which the lanes are equilateral triangles. There is no more simple object in three-dimensional space with these requirements.

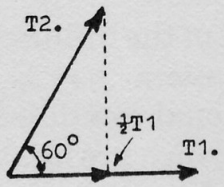
The more sophisticated answer to the question of 60 degrees is time given by approaching the question from the relativity of time frequencies between the other universes (the other time-axes). Time is the wave propagation of atoms which determines the direction of the past to the future. Simultaneously these time-creating or timeless waves are the linear phase waves combining to maintain the atomic rotating field. The problem is that "our' atoms do not experience the right frequencies of the other time-axes, because they do not propagate with the same speed, but advance in time.

Thus there is an apparent frequency-shift, a kind of Doppler shift, by which the frequencies of the "other" time-axes are experienced by "our" atom. One should realize that the timeless vibrations of the other universes also exist in our universe.

At first sight it seems impossible for a rotating field to possess a constant phase-shift because between vibrations of different frequencies a constant phase-shift is not possible unless the frequencies are related to each other in a particular way. They are harmonic. Two vibrations are harmonic if the apparent frequencies have constant ratios to each other, like 1:2, 1:3, 1:4, etc.

Timeless waves can only exist when the frequencies arerelated the harmonic ratio 1: 2.

Timeless waves can only exist when the frequencies are related by the harmonic ratio 1 : 2.



Picture explaining the frequency-shift for 60 degrees time-axis angle.

The frequency ratio is determined by the angle between the two time-axes, as the picture shows. Our time direction is T1while another time direction is shown as T2. The time

direction propagating forwards (from past to future) is useful to our universe, while the backward-moving impulses of the timeless wave do not "catch" the rotating field of "our" atoms. Secondly the time-axis at a right angle (90degrees) to our axis T1 does not make any contribution, we experience this time-axis as non-existing.

As the picture shows, due to the angle of 60 degrees, "our" atom experiences exactly half the time-speed of the other time-axis and this makes the frequency harmonic. As T1=2 times T2, the result is the simplest harmonic ratio of 1:2, determined by the angle of projection of 60 degrees between two time-axes. (Pythagoras' law for right angled triangles).

All other possibilities and other harmonic ratios fail to give non-destructive contributions for the necessary interference intensification. Other excitations of higher order harmonic ratios give more complicated time-axes structures of the rotating atom field and cannot be stable. Also because the couple-field feedback to the total mass (inertia) of the universes is not optimised (see the following paragraphs).

It supposes simultaneously the existence of a higher number of co-existing universes which seems highly unlikely (higher than twelve). Therefore we must decide for the simplest three-dimensional geometric form: the equilateral triangular pyramid.

The ancient symbol of God, the Star of David.

It is necessary to summarize the above issues of the principle.

1. The choice of the mechanism of limitation determined the existence of all types of timeless waves, among which was the (most complex) three-dimensional rotating time-field.
2. The limitation took place by interference quenching the primeval infinite vibration (possibility) affording more time-axes in three dimensions.
3. A time-axis is a part of the infinite force-field. This only exists as a single linear vibration.
4. For a three-dimensional rotating field at least six linear field waves are necessary, which are located spatially in time having angles of 60 degrees between the time-axes.
5. The angle of 60 degrees could only be created by an apparent frequency shift maintaining the harmonic vibrations of the rotating field.

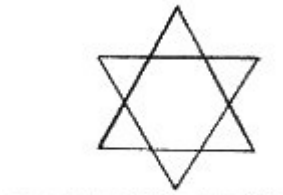
These considerations determine the mechanism of blocking the finite. It consists of six time-axes forming a closed three dimensional object, which creates and restricts the speed of the rotating atom-field.

Though every time-axis carries two universes, there are in the frightening depth of Cosmic space twelve distinct cosmic structures, separated by the unbridgeable barrier of time. Not only are there eleven other universes apart from ours, but they are all embedded in the same cosmic or geometric space. Mi universes have the same size and

the same energy content. The geometric space is necessarily the location in the nothing in which the omnipotent vibration quenched itself by interference. It is the location for waves encountering each other, as it is for light-waves interfering with each other. But it does not require that every atom has twelve bridges at the same space point in time. Or more crucially, it does not mean that every human being has twelve images of himself without knowing it.

It is the mechanism of interference synchronisation of the timeless waves which uncouples the universes at each space point, simultaneously maintaining the time-propagation of each universe.

The equilateral triangular pyramid is the symbol of God, the Father as it is known everywhere in the universe(after lifting the cosmic isolation). We know it as the double equilateral triangles of the Star of David, also six time-axes with angles of 60 degrees. It means that the principle of the limitation was revealed to humanity centuries ago, but we did not understand its meaning



The Star of David.

The Analogue carrier-field model, an instruction model

The cosmic carrier field of all space and matter performs a six-fold function, of which some have already been discussed in general way.

1. The carrier function of an infinitely strong force-field blocked in itself contains the fluidum conducting all waves without dissipation and maintained to eternity.
1. The orientation of the time-axes of the universes with respect to nothing provides the structure of the carrier-field of three dimensions, the bounded Love-will, creating our life and existence.
2. The time synchronisation function locks all universes in the iron grip of the law of cosmic counter-balance from which no atom can escape.
3. The feedback principle of time to the total mass of the universe is the function of the coupling-field by counter-balance (and interference) of the time-bound waves.
4. The function of the timeless primeval atom-field, the atom-principle, as the transmitter program containing the code of matter of which all atoms are remote manifestations.
5. The function as bearer of the absolute ALL-knowledge and goal consciousness, manifesting itself as the laws of nature and as the intelligent goal of life: the spirit of God.

The last function concerns the existential aspects, which have been discussed in the previous section of this book.

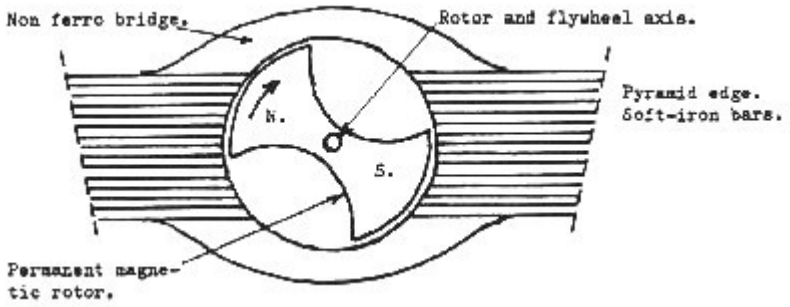
The first analogue model is a mechanical instruction model explaining the cosmic carrier field by means of symbols. This model was built on another life-supporting planet on a high mountain and was many metres high. It was the gathering point for contemplation of that intelligent race for devotion to its Creator.

It was the symbol by which the majority of the race acknowledged the goal of Creation, simultaneously the sign that the cosmic isolation had been lifted. The other function of the carrier-field will be discussed with the help of this mechanical instruction model.

The analogue model consisted mainly of the six edges of a huge equilateral triangular pyramid built out of solid soft-iron bars. The many - metres - thick edges of the pyramid contain an impressive number of iron bars parallel to the direction of the edges and cast in a kind of plastic resin following a process similar to that of casting concrete. So a mainly iron-frame was formed specially suitable for conduction of magnetic pulses of high power without much loss.

So far the carrying function of the cosmic time-field, which primarily maintains the timeless waves is symbolized in the model. The magnetic pulses in the edges of the pyramid run backwards and forwards like the timeless waves in reality.

With respect to the other edges of the pyramid the magnetic pulses are phase-shifted. The problem is that up to now the forward propagation in time has been missed out. In fact we look for the equivalent of the two little wagons on the vibrating rail. The solution can be found in the symbol of the rotating flywheel, as with the atom its rotation is continuous in time, it is in fact time propagation. Therefore the iron frame of the pyramid is discontinued at two places *in* each of the six edges of the pyramid. At this discontinuation point a linear magnetic impulse motor is installed, on the axis of which a large flywheel is mounted (see picture).



The flywheel symbolizes not only the propagation of time, but also the inertia of matter and so the flywheel is in effect the total mass of the universe. This type of magnetic impulse motor is not self-starting, so at the inside on the flywheel axis a starter-motor is mounted, fitted solely for the purpose of stating. One rotating the synchronous motor

maintains the exact number of revolutions at the same frequency of the magnetic alternation field. Thus in each of pyramid's edges two synchronous motors are mounted making twelve flywheels in total.

The two flywheels per axis rotate in opposite directions to symbolize the time propagation in opposite time directions. This type of linear impulse motor is chosen because it can be made to rotate in either direction.

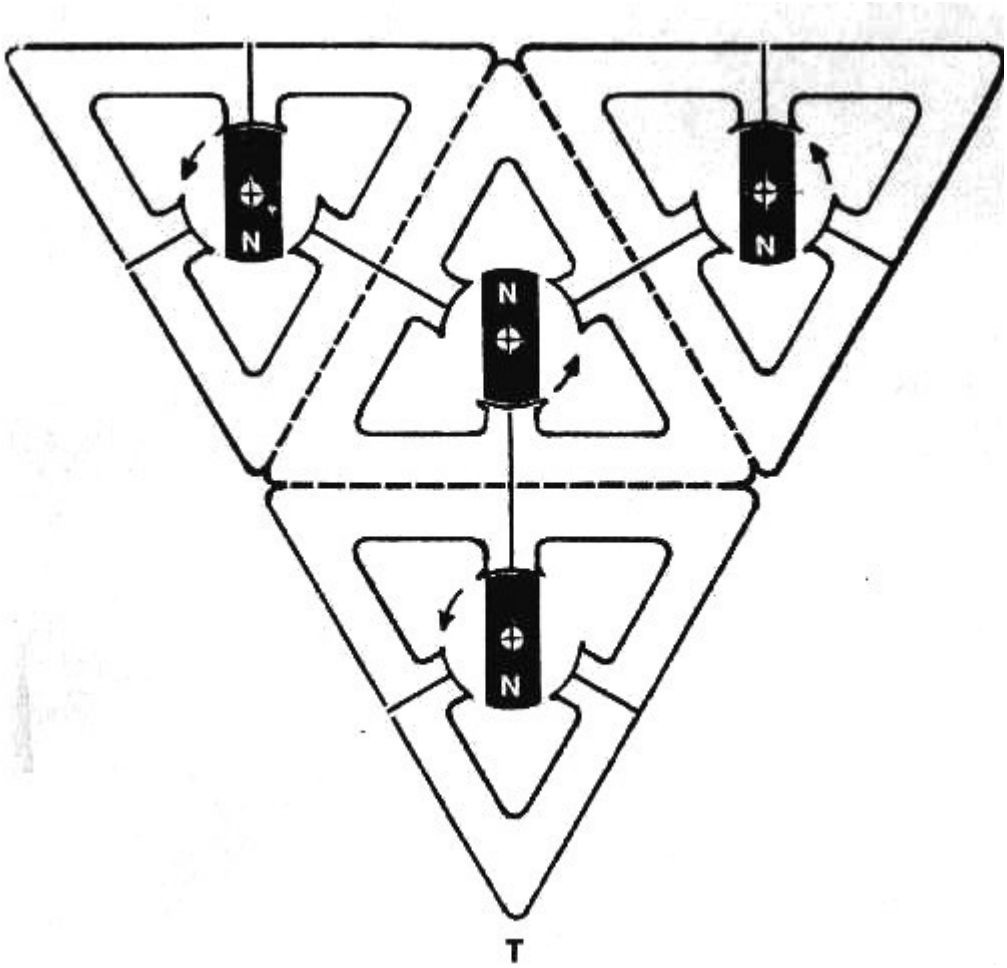
The first analogue model

In one triangular plane of the pyramid the six synchronous motors in the iron frame demonstrate a rotating magnetic field, seen from the centre of the plane. Each edge of the pyramid has the right phase-shift with respect to the other. edges of the triangle.

The first model has four central rotating magnetic field generators in the middle of each triangular plane. (See figure of un-folded pyramid indicating the actual phase-shift).

These four synchronous (three phase) generators are coupled together by a gearbox and are driven by the main electric motor (not shown in the drawing). Consequently the four three-phase generators fulfil the synchronisation and constant phase-shifts for the flywheels of the pyramid-edges. The four separate rotating fields together initiate the complex three-dimensional rotation of the carrier field (or atom-field).

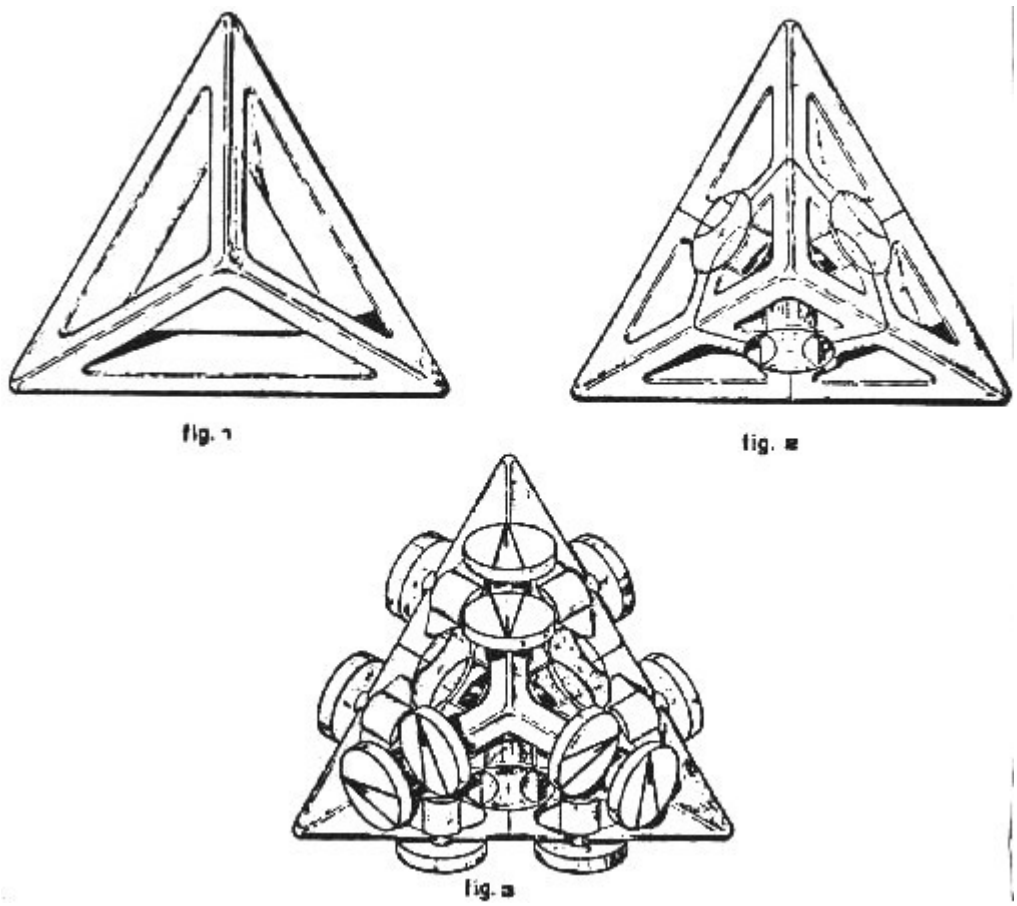
The disadvantage of the first model is that it is further away from reality because the atomic field is not symbolised as one three dimensional rotating field. However it shows better how to imagine the complicated rotation in three dimensions.



The second or the real analogue model

This mechanical model has only one central generator in the middle of the pyramid, instead of the four rotating field generators of the first model. All magnetic waves in the pyramid edges go straight to the pyramid's centre. The rotor of the 3-dimensional rotating generator is like a yoyo with spherical end-surfaces.

It requires a touch of genius to provide the drive-connection between the central motor and the spherical rotor, which has to be started up in a complex rotation. The six diametrically opposed pole-shoes from the middle of the pyramid's edges around the spherical rotor form in pairs three axes of right angles representing a cartersian coordinate system. So it shows that the six time-axes of the edges of the pyramid can be converted into the three principal time-axes of the central sphere.



Together it imitates three-dimensional time which causally creates the three-dimensional space of our universe.

The principles of the first and second analogue models are equivalent one version can be converted into the other, for example, converting the four rotating fields to one three-dimensional rotation in the centre-mass of the pyramid.

The model can be started by switching on the thirteen drive motors. As the flywheels reach velocity the twelve starter-motors are switched off and only the central motor drives the complete gigantic model. The essence is that all flywheels have exactly the same number of revolutions. They are all either synchronous motors or generators. Then the flywheels are marked and illuminated by a stroboscopic flash light. Seen by the normal eye they do not appear to move showing the synchronous rotation and the constant phase-shifts between the flywheels.

These mechanical models are meant to explain the unimaginable Creation out of the nothing by symbolic imitation of the carrier-field. However it is only a weak symbol of Creation. The carrier-field is the esoteric medium, a transmutation of the ~ lute spirit or conscience, it is the spiritual force field of infinite strength which is present everywhere in the universe.

The imitation of the carrier-field functions.

Nevertheless the analogy of reality is incredible. This will be shown in the next

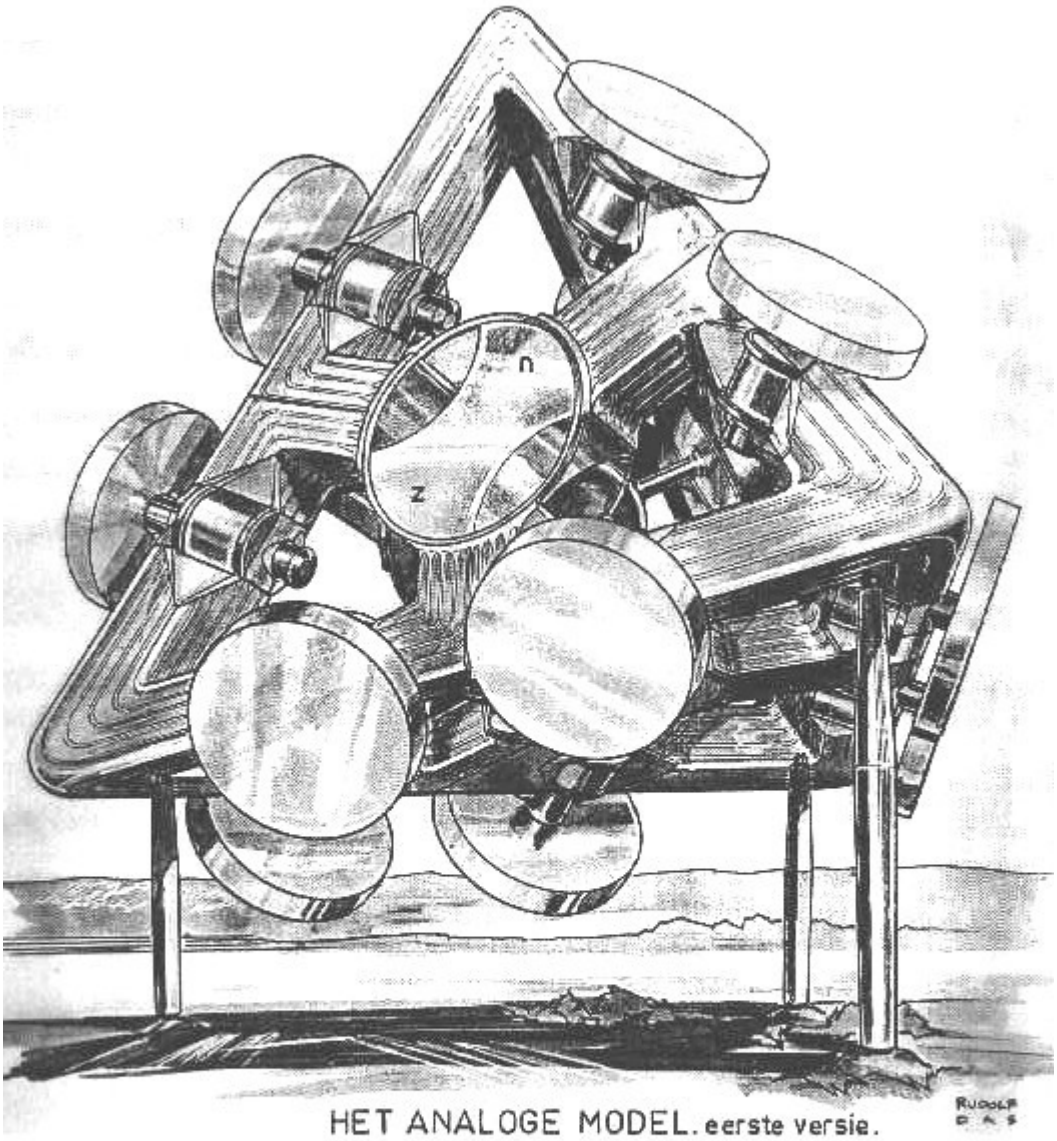
explanation of the five functions of the cosmic carrier-field.

The carrier-function

The foundation of the carrier-field is the infinite force-field created by interference quenching of the original infinite vibration. The mode initiates this force-field with the six bundles of soft-iron bars as the edges of the pyramid.

As in reality the three-dimensional magnetic rotating field in our model is caused by the linear waves of each time-axis. The timeless waves alternate backwards and forwards as in our model. They drive the flywheels representing the masses of the universes, and their rotation is the propagation in time.

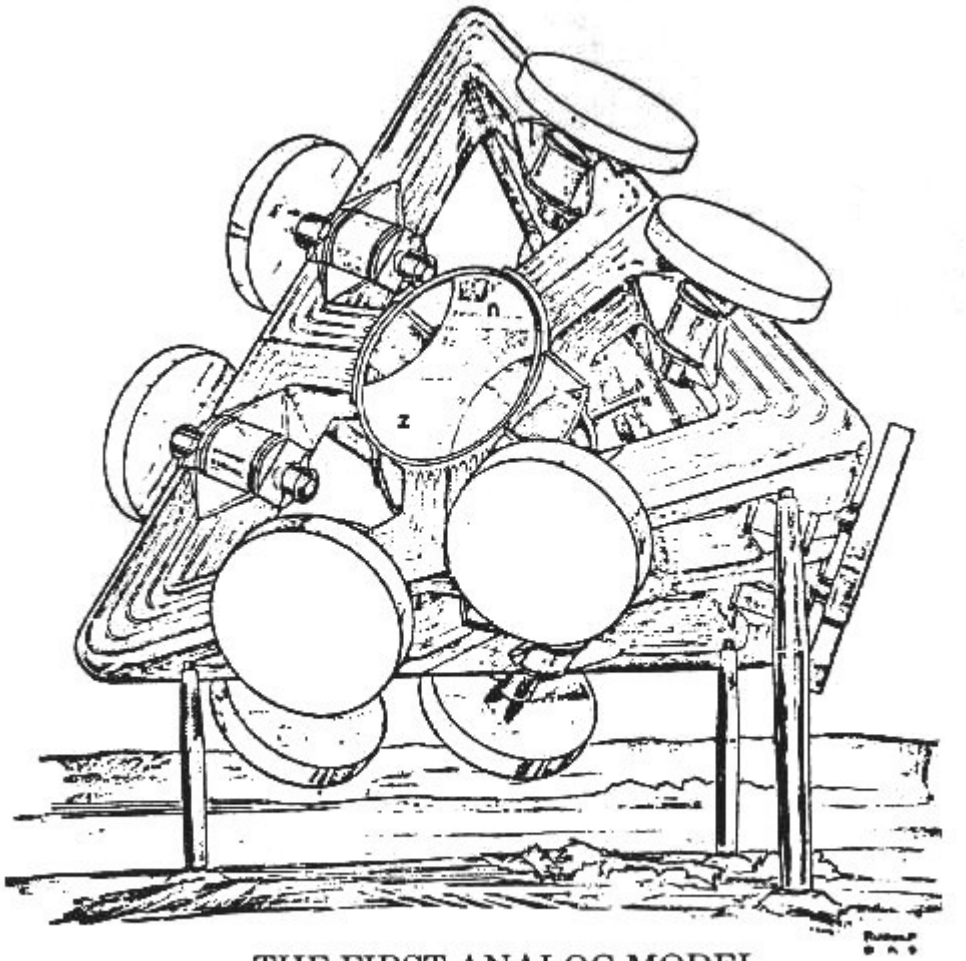
The orientation with respect to the nothing.



This is a painting by Rudolf Dass of the analogous visual-mechanical carrier-field model which symbolizes time and matter creation and synchronization in twelve universes. This giant working construction that was a cross between a monument and a machine was seen on an artificially flattened mountaintop on Iarga. This place was perceived as a place of pilgrimage, a place of meditation and contemplation, and the machine was a symbol of creation. The Iargans know no separation between science and religion, and religious and spiritual theories are entirely scientific. The model was several hundred yards long. The machine seemed to operate by some kind of perpetual motion, neither running on fuel or electrical power.

The relative position of one time-axis in the apparent nothing plays an important role in the orientation of the universes in reality, determining the direction of each time-axis. Here the first model is shown representing the four three-phase synchronous generators in the planes of the pyramid. Only with decomposition of the three-dimensional rotation into four rotations can one show that the three-dimensional rotating field has left no remaining component in the nothing, while in contrast a two- dimensional rotating field

can not he nullified, a remaining component will always exist in the nothing. This can be explained by considering a single plane of the pyramid with its six flywheels at the edges, the analogue for a two-dimensional carrierfield. The rotation impulse of the flywheels is compensated by the opposite rotations but the rotation impulse of the central three-phase generator is left over. It can be measured by the outside world (the nothing).



THE FIRST ANALOG MODEL.

It requires four field three-phase generators (maintaining overall symmetry) to compensate for these rotation impulses.

With this the three-dimensionality of the carrier-field has been shown and the orientation of the time-axes with respect to the nothing is determined.

The time synchronization function.

Impressively the model imitates the time synchronization, simultaneously maintaining the cosmic counter-balance by which the universes continue to exist. The rotation of the two flywheels per axis is in opposite directions and they rotate with exactly the same speed. Thus it imitates the circular motion to the timeless waves which progresses exactly synchronous by their mutual interference coupling.

The twelve cosmic systems run without any dissipation, once started, the perpetuum mobile continues into eternity with the absolute accuracy of time-synchronisation. If one supposes the model to be without loss and without using the eternal driving motors, it will continue to run synchronously due to the inertia of the flywheels and the fact that the synchronous linear impulse motors can function as generators as well.

This symbolizes another property of the continuous circular motion of the timeless waves, because every wave somewhere in the pyramid circuit at each moment has its opposite value resulting in an overall zero at any moment.

This is the law of conservation of the nothing.

The coupling-field function.

Time synchronization is not alone determined by the iron grip of the three-dimensional carrier-field and the principle of cosmic counter-balance. Apart from this an important effect is realized from the feedback of the gigantic masses of the universes to the timeless waves. These masses can be considered as enormous flywheels without loss. Once started by the super flash, no change in speed is possible, because a force of sufficient magnitude is simply not available. This function of the coupling field can also be shown in our model, because the linear synchronous motors of the flywheels are also generators. If the central driving motor is switched off, then the flywheels continue for some time to drive the central three-dimensional rotating sphere. Everything stays exactly synchronous with the same phase-shift.

This experiment shows how the flywheels feed their energy back and have a stabilizing function in time-synchronization. The coupling-field of the masses of the universes is fed back in the time-bound vibrations of the atom-field from which no atom total mass of the universes is fed back to one single atom.

The timeless primeval atom-principle, the transmitter function.

The atom-field is a time-creating field and as such a remote manifestation of the primeval atom principle. It can he compared with a transmitter. As soon as the program is converted into waves of great power, billions of radios can receive the same program, the number is unlimited. Everything depends on the one program of the transmitter, the primeval atom-field. If this exists with infinite strength, it is at the same time the vibration medium (the carrier-field) which helps it to spread everywhere. Thus any atom in any universe can receive the timeless basic program. The second model shows the three-dimensional time-field of the primeval atom field most clearly, although this is a three-dimensional rotation of the central sphere in spatial sense. This is an analogue of reality, the atom has a spherical field which is defined by six linear time-vibration directions. Any atom is a remote manifestation of the one carrier-field of infinite strength. ' Considering this fifth function of the carrier-field one has to realize that only the central sphere, the atom, is visible to us. The ~fields in the pyramid edges outside the sphere are invisible. It is the time-field reality of which the atom is a reflection.

The mechanical instruction models are the visual representations of the principles of the

cosmic unified field theory. This requires however some marginal notes. A material comparison to explain spiritual abstractions is always in some ways incomplete. There are several hiatus of which only the three most important ones are mentioned.

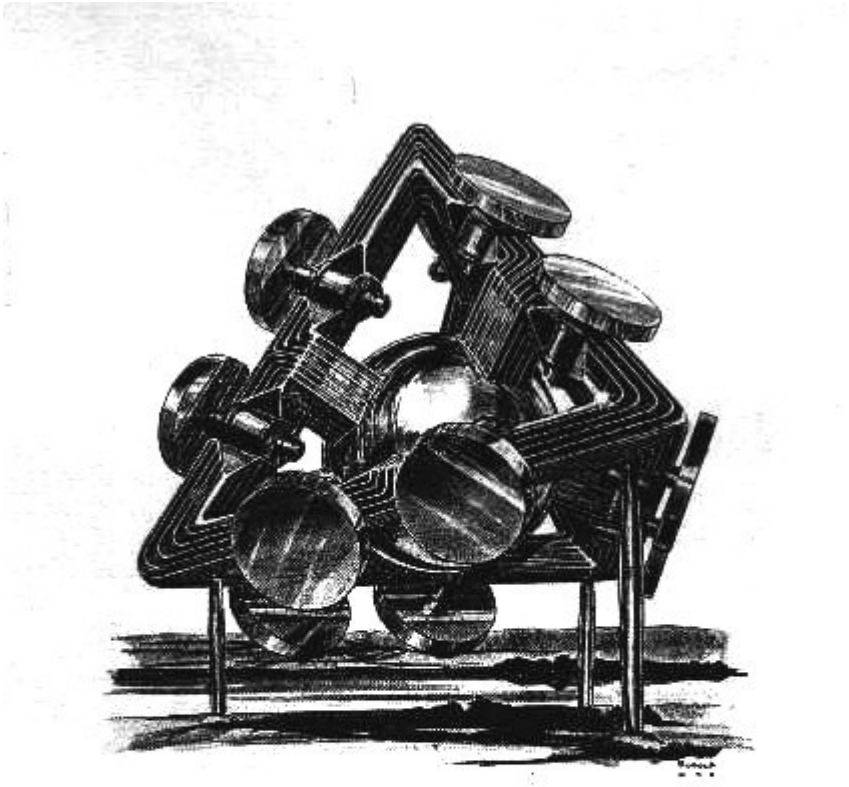
1. In the model one time-axis represents only one frequency of the magnetic field, while in reality all frequencies are contained. Every frequency however can be initiated for each time-axis for which the interference representation of the analogue model is valid.
2. The model demonstrates the rotating field of the timeless waves. It does not imitate the time-bound waves by which the our time-axis the propagation speed of time is x, then the phase velocity of the two time-axes connected to "our" pyramid edge is -1/2X. The other two time-axes connecting our time-axis with the other corner of the pyramid is +1/2X, making up for the time speed of our anti-universe X. The crossing, not-touching time-axis is perpendicular to our time-axis and does not contribute.
3. In our model the masses of the universes are given by the flywheel symbol. In fact this is fundamentally wrong, because it is separated from the three-dimensional rotation of the central sphere. It can therefore basically not maintain the counter-balance of the nothing.

The most important conclusion of the analogue model is that time, matter and energy are creations out of the nothing and therefore the counter-balance has to be maintained to allow the causal infinity of the nothing exist.

The existential symbolism of the model.

So far the physical aspects of the model have been unravelled, but if one wants to give a wider context to the model suddenly all the physical symbols change their meaning. In relation to philosophical or theological disciplines the model takes on the additional meaning of the unification of science and religion. By certain inherent laws within any intelligent race the denial of God's existence will be destroyed sooner or later. Earth science will provide an indestructible contribution to our final knowledge-awareness which we shall attribute as typical human attainment in the cosmic integration. It is that piece of our human identity and self-awareness which we shall possess and care for throughout eternity. It the light of this purpose science serves God and the distinction between science and religion fades away.

In a religious sense the spherical three-dimensional time-field in the heart of the pyramid has a special meaning. It symbolizes the Soul of the Creator, the Father who is the pure Identity of the infinite origin. The pyramid symbolizes his infinite Love-will, the cage in which the infinity of his Existence has been blocked irrevocably. He sacrificed his Ego and his freedom, to love his twelve Sons once. He is present only indirectly in his Creation as the reflection of the infinity, the Supreme Being, as the one Ego-consciousness of the Archangels.



The Instructional Analog Model

The mechanical instruction models are the visual representations of the principles of the cosmic unified field theory. The model is intended to demonstrate that time, matter, and energy are creations out of the nothing and therefore the counter-balance has to be maintained to allow the causal infinity of the nothing to exist. In a broader context the physical symbols all take on new meaning and demonstrate the unification of science and religion. In a religious sense the spherical three-dimensional time-field in the heart of the pyramid symbolizes the Soul of the Creator. The pyramid symbolizes his infinite love-will, the cage in which the infinity of His existence has been blocked irrevocably. The lines symbolize the different frequencies of the timeless waves. The flywheels on the edges of the pyramid symbolize the twelve associated and interrelated universes, including ours, that make up this unity. One cannot exist without the others.

That is why the theologian covers the central sphere with pure gold, symbolizing the golden Heart, the Holy of Holies, the most sacred secret of the universe. The pyramid is then painted dark red, the universal colour of love. Over the red many thin golden stripes run in the direction along the pyramid edges. These stripes symbolize the different frequencies of the timeless waves, the expressions of Love and faith of the Father and his infinite Will.

Gathered around the golden Heart are the twelve flywheels, coloured white, the colour of purity and innocence. The model shows that every universe has the power to awaken the matter-consciousness and to transform it to the new God: the Son. The goal of Creation is therefore the awakening and the formation of the twelve Sons of the Father.

This is not in contradiction with the Bible telling us that the Father sent his only-begotten Son. The Bible is solely directed to man. It is our instruction book for life

describing our attitude towards God and our fellow man. The Bible does not tell anything about life on other planets, because it is not relevant in our relationship with God now.

The same goes for our parallel universes. In fact they do not exist for us, because they are not in our world of existence but somewhere else. They do not exist for all intelligent races in this universe, we shall never be able to observe them nor experience them in any way. Perhaps at the end of all time we shall meet. In our world the Father has one only-begotten Son and this truth is already so unimaginable that nobody can conceive the consequences yet.

END OF IARGAN DISCUSSION